



Library of the Theological Seminary,

PRINCETON, N. J.

Presented by Rev. J. C. Backus, D.D., LL.D.  
Baltimore, Md.

Division BS1197

Section 4.D33

Shelf.....

Number v. 2.....

Dorothy Watson

Given Her by her Nephew  
Will<sup>m</sup> Bromer Late  
of Stew Market  
1774.







*Thomas Colward.*

AN

*Long Melford*

**Historical ACCOUNT**  
OF THE  
**LIFE and REIGN**  
OF  
**DAVID**  
King of **ISRAEL.**

Interpersed with Various  
**CONJECTURES, DIGRESSIONS,**  
*and* **DISQUISITIONS.**

In which (among other Things)  
Mr. BAYLE's Criticisms, upon the *Conduct* and *Character*  
of That PRINCE, are fully considered

---

*And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that  
bringeth forth his fruit in his season. His leaf also shall not  
wither.*

---

PSAL. I.

---

By the AUTHOR of *Revelation examined with Candor.*

---

In Two VOLUMES.

*P. Delany*

---

VOL. II.

---

To which are prefixed,  
**REFLECTIONS** upon the present Neglect of the PUBLIC  
WORSHIP of GOD.

---

The **FOURTH EDITION.**

---

L O N D O N :

Printed by S. RICHARDSON, for JOHN RIVINGTON, in *St. Paul's  
Church Yard*, J. FULLER, P. DAVEY and B. LAW, in *Ave-  
maria-lane*, R. BALDWIN, in *Pater-noster Row*, G. KEITH,  
in *Gracechurch-street*, S. CROWDER, near *London Bridge*, and  
T. FIELD, in *Cheapside*. 1759.

Received of Mr. J. H. [illegible]

the sum of [illegible]

for [illegible]

on the [illegible]

of [illegible]

at [illegible]

for [illegible]

the sum of [illegible]

on the [illegible]

of [illegible]

at [illegible]

PHILADELPHIA  
REC. NOV 1841  
THEOLOGICAL  
LIBRARY

---

---

---

To his GRACE the most REVEREND

*HUGH BOULTER,*

*Lord Primate of all IRELAND.*

*May it please your GRACE,*

I TAKE this occasion, as I shall every other, of publicly avowing the honour I bear you : although with little advantage to you, or distinction to myself ; unless merely in the manner of professing that veneration and esteem, which is borne you, alike, by every man of this nation ; where you are justly considered as a public parent, equally loved and honoured. How well you are entitled to this appellation, will sufficiently appear, when it is remembered, that to you, under GOD, this nation

owes the main support of her Poor, in the late general calamity. The famine was far extended, and the mortality begun ; when your unexampled and unbounded charity, like the sacred censor in the hand of *Aaron*, interposed between the living and the dead, and *the plague was stayed*.

THE present age sufficiently acknowledge this, and posterity will know it, without the aid of this anonymous and short-lived letter ; and perhaps may learn from this, and other coeval (tho' less eminent) instances, that wealth is sometimes more useful in the hands of the clergy, than some of their lay-brethren have always been willing to allow. It may prove an occasion of letting their own equal inquiries inform them, in what hands it is more virtuously or honourably imployed, in the prosperous days of the community ; or with more  
public

public spirit, and Christian beneficence, in those of its distress. Yours, my Lord was then confessedly a public Fund, a pure and salutary fountain, from whence all that thirsted might draw and drink ; and did so, by many thousands a day ; to the saving of such a multitude of lives, as will be utterly incredible with posterity.

MAY the Providence of GOD, (clearly seen in your advancement to this high station) that Providence, which hath remarkably blessed you with very uncommon vigour, both of body and mind, to this advanced age, long continue *both* to you, and *you* to us ! And may you conclude your blessed life, as you have led it, after the example of your LORD and SAVIOUR, *doing good !*

THIS end, and this example, we all should have in view, in all our purposes,



as, I trust in GOD, the author of this book had, both in publishing it to the world, and inscribing it to you ; for, in truth, he expects no addition, either of honour or interest, to him, from this un-authentic proof of his being, with the truest veneration and esteem,

*Your GRACE'S*

*Most dutiful, and most obedient,*

*humble Servant.*



RECEIVED  
REC. NOV 1881  
THEOLOGICAL  
LIBRARY  
R E F L E C T I O N S

UPON THE  
PRESENT NEGLECT

OF THE

Public Worship *of* GOD.

**D**AVID's exceeding solicitude, and amazing expence, to establish the public worship of GOD in his capital, in a way worthy of it, together with the raptures expressed in his attendance upon it, naturally suggest this reflexion to the thinking reader: If the establishment of the divine worship, and attendance upon it, were then of such inestimable value, and incredible delight, amidst the height of all worldly glory and grandeur; What can have sunk both so low, in the estimation of the present age, that few men, of high condition, are found to have any regard for either? And our wonder increases, when we find, upon inquiry, that the setting apart one day in seven, as a day of rest from the labours of life, and a day of attendance upon the public worship of God, is a practice of such great antiquity, and universal extent throughout the ancient world, that learned men have justly con-

cluded the institution to have been as old as the creation ; and therefore enjoined by *Moses*, not as a new command, but as a duty of careful attendance to one already well known, *Remember the Sabbath-day to keep it holy\**. And they are confirmed in this judgment, by finding it, upon reflection, an institution every way worthy of infinite wisdom and goodness; and absolutely necessary to the well-being of the world. And indeed, there is good reason to doubt, whether, without the benefit of this institution, the growing race of mankind would ever have attained to the strength and perfection even of their animal nature ; and all the reason in the world to believe, that the labouring part of mankind (which are at least ninety-nine in an hundred) would not otherwise live out half their days ; *their strength* would then be literally *labour and sorrow* ; they could live but a very little time, and they would spend even the little they did live, in added misery ; and at the last have abundant reason to take up *Jacob's* complaint (before *Pharaoh*) in the strictest sense, *Few and evil have been the days of the years of my pilgrimage*. And, as for the higher orders of men, if any such could subsist in such a state things, (as I am well satisfied they could not) they would, however, subsist to no higher or nobler purposes than the *wild Ass's colt in the wilderness*.

\* *Exod.* chap. xx. ver. 8.

FORASMUCH, then, as this command is so evidently of divine institution, and infinite importance to mankind; Can there be matter of more astonishment to a thinking man, than to see this institution so openly, so avowedly profaned, in so serious and wise a nation as this, by almost all orders and degrees of men amongst us? But especially those of higher condition; by those who affect to be thought, at least to be called, The better sort; and by them as openly and avowedly despised, and trampled under-foot; as if the command were reversed to them, and they were bound in conscience to remember the Sabbath-day, only in order to profane it; to sacrifice it to every vice, and every vanity, that comes into their hearts! infomuch that every good Christian may now take up *Jeremiah's* lamentation, with very little change: *The ways of Sion do mourn, because none come to the solemn feasts: all her gates are desolate; her priests sigh—her adversaries are the chief, her enemies prosper; for the Lord hath afflicted her—the adversaries saw her, and did mock at her Sabbaths.* And therefore I hope it may be deemed matter of no small moment, to inquire seriously into the causes and consequences of this calamity.

Now one main source of this evil is Pride.

IN an humble heart, gratitude naturally keeps pace with the blessings bestowed upon it; and, of consequence, the piety of a good man rises and expands, in proportion to his enlargement and exaltation: whereas, in an haughty heart, the

## X      *On the* PRESENT NEGLECT

the effect is the direct contrary. Every success, to a man of that make, is the effect of his own wisdom; and every advantage, the reward of his own merit: consequently, there can be no room for piety, or gratitude to GOD, where every thing but self is excluded. And therefore, so far are such men from being thankful to their Maker, for the blessings and advantages they enjoy above all men; that they live so in the world, as if they verily believed GOD did not govern it.—These are literally, and strictly, *the ungodly of this world!* And the *Psalmist* hath, long since, left us their true character: *The ungodly is so proud, that he careth not for God, neither is God in all his thoughts.* By a long disuse of devotion, and open neglect of divine worship, he gradually forgets every duty he owes his Maker; and, when he hath for some time habituated himself to live without GOD in the world, he then begins to doubt his very existence; he then begins to forget, that *in him we live, and move, and have our being.* And thus the neglect of GOD's public worship naturally leads from one degree of irreligion to another, until it end in atheism.

BUT pride is not the only origin of this evil; its sources are various: the necessary avocation of business is pleaded by some men of learned professions, whom I am very unwilling to censure; and the care of health, by some of the other sex: of whom it is remarkable, that they can attend all other assemblies of mankind, at all hours of the day and night, where the  
danger



danger is manifestly greater. And as some of these assemblies fall on the eve of the Sabbath, the late hours kept in them confound all order of time; and so the next day's hour of public worship is slept away, and the duty they owe to GOD sacrificed to vanity and the world.

BUT one sure and principal source of this spirit of irreligion, and neglect of the public worship of GOD, is Travelling.

IT is the common infirmity of people of fortune, to imagine that the education of their children is never complete, until they have seen the world, as they call it; nor is the opinion altogether ungrounded: their error is, that they think they cannot too soon hurry them into it; and they succeed accordingly. For, being thus set out, early, young, unexperienced, unprincipled, and uninformed, into the midst of foreign fashions, vanities, and vices of every kind, they are early imbued with them all. Nor is it possible it should be otherwise, when they are only fitted to converse with the giddy, the light, the libertine part of the world, from whom they can learn nothing else: the consequence of which is, that sensual pleasures, foreign fopperies, amusements, and luxuries, become the business of their lives for ever after; whereas, would parents wait until their sons were of riper years, until their minds were properly enlarged, and enlightened with liberal knowledge; and their principles of virtue, and true religion, fixt upon the same foundation; they would then be fitted to converse with the serious and thinking

## xii *On the* PRESENT NEGLECT

part of the world they visited ; to observe their manners ; and to be improved by their virtue and wisdom, if they had any ; and, if they had none, to be amended even by their vices, and informed by their folly and ignorance.

NOR is this all—for, being early sent out into countries where a religion different from their own is professed, consequently where they cannot attend upon the public worship of GOD, they acquire early habits of neglecting his public worship : and, if they are not attended with some serious men of a religious character (which is very rarely the case), they acquire early habits of neglecting all the divine ordinances, until religion becomes no part of their business, *neither is God in all their thoughts*. And thus it comes to pass, that, returning home, in this condition, as their travelling airs, and foreign fopperies intitle them to lead the fashion in other vanities ; so also, in this vilest of all abominations, *the forsaking the assemblies of the saints* ; utterly neglecting the public worship, and *despising the Church of God* : the consequences of which are lamentable every way. For, whereas the Scriptures are, under GOD, the true and only sure source of virtue, the fountain head of every thing that is exalted and excellent in our nature, for want of having these great ideas perpetually excited and revived in their minds, by attending to the public Prayers, and hearing the Scriptures constantly read in the Church, they gradually and daily languish in their souls, until at length they are utterly effaced and lost. They  
are



are in the condition of those artists, who, being long absent from *Rome*, have complained, that their ideas, both of painting and statuary, gradually decayed, and degenerated in them, for want of having them perpetually renewed there, by those noblest originals of their arts. If these our travelling gentry had the same ingenuity, I am sure they might, with equal justice, complain, that they gradually sunk into sense, and mean, groveling selfish sentiments: that their ideas of every thing refined, and amiable, and excellent, gradually decayed and died within them, in proportion to their absence from the public worship of GOD; in proportion to their absence from those most edifying, most amending, and most enobling lectures of heavenly wisdom, weekly, and daily published in the Church, in the Hymns and Psalms, the Liturgy and Litany, in the Epistles and Gospels, and Lessons of the day.

IT is strange and shocking, to see how these men delude themselves to their utter ruin. They have heard, that charity is the great and governing principle of the Christian Religion; and they imagine, that, if they have that, they have every thing: and they delude themselves to think they have that, when they can talk plausibly of what they think equivalent to it, humanity and social sentiments. They are men fond of the praises of virtue, but strangers to the power of it (as one of its late greatest enemies is well known to have written Rhapsodies and Panegyrics upon it). They have the terms Humane and Benevolent, perpetually in their mouths;

#### xiv *Of the* PRESENT NEGLECT

mouths; but they rarely reach their hearts. The terms are indeed sufficiently specious; but, in reality, mere *sounding brass, and tinkling cymbals*, substituted into the place of Christian charity: a principle from which no other could restrain us from believing their hearts utterly estranged. Can they think themselves humane, who never add one single mite to the weekly and monthly collections of the Church, (in all other Christian regions of the earth but this, and) from the beginning of Christianity in the world, the surest, the best-judged, and best-conducted fund, by which all the wants and distresses of humanity are ordinarily relieved and supplied in the society; and many of them so relieved, and only so relieved, even here\*? Can they think themselves friends to virtue, who deliberately decline the noblest aids and incitements to it; the public and united supplications of the faithful to the throne of GOD, for grace and guidance to enlighten their souls, and incline their hearts to every social and Christian virtue; to every office of humanity, to every impulse of charity, and every praise and practice of piety? Can they seriously think themselves friends to virtue, who decline these aids and incitements to it, and discourage the hopes of inestimable rewards in heaven? Can they think themselves benevolent, who, by steadily absenting themselves from the public worship of GOD, do all that in them lieth, to banish all awe and reve-

\* All wants and distresses relieved by briefs;

rence of Him from the earth! to efface and to blot out true Religion from the hearts of men! true Religion, the only sure cement of society; the true, and, let me add, the only sure fountain of *glory to God on high, and on earth peace, good will towards men.*

BUT, suppose these men had charity, they little know the nature of Religion, who take that to be the whole of it: for charity respects only our duty to our neighbour; and the duties we owe to GOD, and to ourselves, are as truly essentials of Religion, as charity; and those we owe to GOD, are the basis of the whole

THEY know little of Religion who do not know, that the setting apart stated times for the public worship of GOD, and attending constantly upon it, is essential to the very being of Religion in the world; and therefore, when GOD declares to his people by the mouth of his prophet, (*Ezek. xx. 19, 20.*) *I am the Lord thy God*, he immediately adds, as the necessary consequence of their acknowledging him in that character, *walk in my statutes, keep my judgments, and hallow my Sabbaths.* Every Christian knows, that to love God, *with all the heart, and all the soul, is the first and great commandment; and to love our neighbour as ourselves, the second:* but there is this plain distinction in the point; we are to love God, *the fountain of all goodness*, and of all good to us, for his own sake, and man for his Maker's sake; for reasons drawn from his authority and appointments. So that the love of GOD is the fundamental and ruling principle  
of

## xvi *On the* PRESENT NEGLECT

of all Religion; and the Gospel hath added to this, the great essential of the Christian Religion, *faith in Jesus Christ. Upon these two*, thus considered, *hang all the law, the prophets*, the evangelists, and the apostles: and therefore St. Paul sums up the whole of his preaching, both to the *Jewish* and *Gentile* world, under these two great heads, *repentance towards God, and faith towards our Lord Jesus Christ.* Repentance towards God, which implieth a detestation and confession of sin, a sincere love of God, and sorrow for offending him, and a fixt purpose of amendment and obedience for ever after—and faith in *Christ*, which implieth an humble and thankful acceptance of this blessed Son of God, as our great Saviour, and Sacrifice to the divine justice for our sins; our great Redeemer, Reconciler, and Mediator with God. And whosoever wants these, wants the great fundamentals of true Religion; and whosoever neglects the public worship of God, deliberately neglects both these, deliberately neglects the public confession of his sins, and the great duties consequent to his redemption; and, by neglecting, naturally unlearns them all. And whosoever wants these fundamentals of Christianity, is an infidel; and, as such, shall, at the last day, be cut off by his Lord, and *have his portion appointed* him with the unbelievers, St. Luke xliiith chap. 46th ver.

HAVING thus shewn you several sources of this crying guilt, the neglect of God's public worship, together with the great evils immediately



ately arise from it; I cannot however quit this subject, without laying some of its many other sad consequences more fully before you; together with the blessings and advantages of the contrary behaviour.

AND, first, one dreadful consequence from this shameful neglect of GOD's public worship, is, that it unfits us for every other office of religion: it unqualifies us for calling down the surest aids, and highest of all consolations, to our country, in the day of its calamity; inasmuch as it alienates us from GOD, and makes every office of religion, makes even our prayers, an abomination in his sight; for so *Solomon* sadly assures us (*Prov. xxviii. v. 9.*), *He that turneth away his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer shall be an abomination.*

FROM hence also, my brethren, from this shameful neglect of the public worship of GOD, as from its fountain-head, arises that utter disregard of the sacred writings, and avowed, or perhaps rather affected, contempt of the clergy, among the higher orders of men amongst us; together with their unbounded and (GOD be praised!) ungrounded revilings of the whole order of the reformed Christian priesthood; imputing to them, without shame, or colour of truth, every vice, every delusion, every evil art, that ever reigned in any order of priests, either in the times or scenes of papal tyranny, or heathen corruption: and all this, with as little sensibility either to decency, or justice, as if they branded every modest matron they met, with every abo-

xviii *On the* PRESENT NEGLECT

mination in the lives of a *Julia*, a *Messalina*, or a *Clytemnestra*; proclaiming, at once, their own infamy, and either shameful insults upon truth, or gross affected ignorance! If these men of superior talents (as they would be deemed) had talents to think freely and largely, they could not but see, that the law of the Sabbath is a law which demonstrates itself of divine original: a law so calculated for the exigencies of the whole *Creation*, the preservation of true religion, and the relief of the labouring world, as clearly evinces it the work of infinite wisdom, benignity, and bounty! A law to which every civility and virtue in life owes its origin and establishment; and which, if it ceased but one century from amongst us (for the seminaries of learning and religion would cease with it, or could not long survive it), would reduce the race of our vainest vaunters of wisdom into more than *Hottentot* barbarity! forasmuch as they would then have *Hottentot* ignorance superadded to native vice. And dare they pretend to any degree of humanity, who turn their backs upon the Sabbath, and do all that in them lieth, to banish this heavenly, this divine ordinance from the earth? to banish the blessed Sabbath, and with that the great blessings and civilities of life; the instruction of mankind in all the noblest ways of wisdom and virtue: the weekly and monthly relief of the poor, the only relief of many social distresses even here, and in all other regions of the earth the most extensive and only constant fund of Christian charity—Dare they pre-  
tend



tend to any degree of humanity, who would at once banish from the earth the light of true religion, the relief of want, and the rest from labour?

IF these vain refiners would allow themselves to attend the public worship of GOD with any degree of humility, they would soon come to see, and to feel, the divinity of the sacred writings; they would see the infinite goodness, wisdom, and mercy of the Creator, beaming through every page of them; they would then see and adore *the beauty of holiness*, the amiableness, and the excellency, of virtue: they would then *turn away their foot from doing their own pleasure*; from pursuing their own idle vanities, *upon GOD's holy-day*: they would then call the Sabbath a delight; and the Holy one of the Lord, honourable; and would honour him (Isa. lviii. 13.): they would then see, that wisdom was not born with them alone; nor would die with them! they would then learn, that the priest's lips still retain knowledge; and that it would, sometimes, be no disgrace nor disadvantage to the wisdom of their lay-brethren, to seek the law at his mouth—in a word, they would then see the Christian priesthood, in their true character; *ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God!* they would then see them, to be, at once, *the light*, and *the salt*, of the society; the true sources and guardians of true virtue, civility, and wisdom; and seeing them in this light, would be so far from defaming their characters, vilifying their office,

## XX *On the* PRESENT NEGLECT

office, envying them the portion assigned by Almighty God for their maintenance, or oppressing them in the perception of it, that they would do every thing in their power, to make their lives easy, and their office honourable; at least, they would do so, if they had any remains of humanity, or public spirit; inasmuch as, by so doing, they would greatly (and perhaps more effectually, than by any other possible means whatsoever) promote, and provide for, the happiness and welfare of the whole community; which is inseparably linked and interwoven with that of the reformed Christian priesthood—

An order of men, who neither have, nor can have, any views, interests, or dependances, separate from those of their lay-brethren; but must perpetually rise, and fall, in every thing valuable to man, in one, even, uniform proportion, to the prosperity or calamity of their country.—

And hence it is, that as the *Jewish-priesthood* subsisted, in the main, upon the same foot with ours, the prophets have always considered their interests, as one and the same with those of their people—I say, the prophets who were not priests, nor partial to the priesthood, but the censors and checks of God upon them, have always considered the calamity of the people, as the calamity of the priest; and the prosperity of the people, as the prosperity of the priest. Thus, when *Joel* tells us, in the first chapter of his *Prophecy*, at the 9th verse, that *the priests, the Lord's ministers, mourn*, he immediately adds, *the field is wasted, the land mourneth*—

And when *Jeremiah* pronounceth, in the name of GOD, *I will satiate the soul of the priests with fatness*, he immediately adds, *And my people shall be satisfied with my goodness, saith the Lord*—And much more to the same purpose.

I HAVE been the longer upon this head, to remove those jealousies of the priesthood, which have artfully been sown, and malignantly spread and propagated, through the laity; to the great offence of truth, prejudice of christian charity, increase of irreligion, and infinite disadvantage of the public worship of GOD; which hath so long, and so shamefully, been neglected amongst us! a neglect which involves great guilt in it, and draws much greater, indeed draws every other guilt after it; and of which, therefore, we should now sincerely and earnestly repent, *with weeping, and fasting, and prayer*, to make every other office of religion acceptable in the sight of GOD.

LET me not be understood, as if, by any thing I have said, I would exempt the priesthood from their share in this national guilt. I am afraid we may but too justly apply to many of them that denunciation of divine vengeance, pronounced by the prophet upon the priests of his age; *If ye will not lay it to heart, to give glory to my name, saith the Lord of hosts, I will even send a curse upon you, and I will curse your blessings*. That too many of the clergy (for, how few soever they may be, in reality they are still too many) are too often absent from

## xxii *On the* PRESENT NEGLECT

the public worship of GOD; that too many of them are cold, and careless, in celebrating the sacred offices of religion, in preaching the word of GOD, and pressing it upon the hearts and consciences of their hearers; are sad truths! And is it to be expected, that any thinking man will venerate them, who do not themselves venerate their Maker, as they ought, who do not lay it to heart, to make his worship honourable, and his word powerful; efficacious, to all the purposes of piety; to make his word powerful, and *his praises glorious* upon the earth?—This, however, must be allowed, by their greatest enemies, that their charity failed not in the late day of distress—that they *dealt their bread to the hungry; visited and relieved the fatherless and the widow in their afflictions*; and that with a spirit so truly Christian, that no order of men amongst us had then reason to wish their incomes diminished, or their charity increased. They then clearly saw, that to wish the revenues of their reformed clergy diminished, were, in effect, to wish the miseries of mankind multiplied and unrelieved: which ever was, and ever will be, the case, to the end of the world.

HOWEVER, as the clergy have their share in this national guilt, it is but just they should have their full share in the national humiliation due to it—Therefore, *Let the priests, the ministers of GOD, weep between the porch and the altar, and let them say, Spare thy people, O Lord, and give not thine heritage to reproach:*



*proach: let all orders and degrees, amongst us, rend their hearts, and not their garments, and turn unto the Lord our GOD, with sincere repentance, and true contrition of heart; for he is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth him of the evil—*

This we certainly do know, and he himself hath expressly pronounced the sentence, by his prophet *Ezekiel*, *Ezek. chap. xx. ver. 21.* That if we do not, both priest and people, *walk in his statutes, and keep his judgments, and hallow his Sabbaths, I will pour out my fury upon them, saith the LORD, and accomplish mine anger against them.*

LET us then, in the name of Jesus Christ, this moment, *lay aside every weight, and this sin that doth so easily beset us; and let us draw near to GOD, with a contrite and true heart, and in full assurance of faith; not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but earnestly pouring out our united supplications to Almighty GOD, for his mercy to this church and nation; and for deliverance from the crying guilt of despising and insulting his Sabbaths, and the just and dreadful vengeance due to it—From this guilt, and this vengeance, GOD, of his infinite mercy, deliver us all, through the merits and mediation of Jesus Christ.*

---

---

---

---

THE  
CONTENTS  
OF  
VOLUME II.

BOOK III.

- Reflections upon the present Neglect of the*  
*Public Worship of GOD* Page vii
- Chap. I. *David designs to build a Temple, but*  
*is forbidden. GOD's Promises to his Po-*  
*sterity. David's Thanksgivings* 1
- Chap. II. *David invades Philistia, and takes Gath,*  
*Ec. — He then invades and subdues Moab*  
14
- Chap. III. *David conquers the Syrians and Edom-*  
*ites. Hadadezer proved to be the Hadad of*  
*Nicolaus Damascenus. Some Difficulties in*  
*the sacred Text cleared* 24
- Chap. IV. *A short Account of David's Ministers.*  
*— His Cherethites and Pelethites* 42
- Chap. V. *David inquires after Saul's Posterity,*  
*and finds Mephibosheth, a surviving Son of*  
*Jonathan's, whom he treats as his own* 49
- Chap. VI. *David's Embassadors abused by the*  
*Ammonites. — A War ensues* 57
- Chap. VII. *The Syrian War finished. — David's*  
*Felicities during this Period summed up. —*  
*This Book ends.* 68



## B O O K IV.

- Chap. I. David, beholding Bathsheba bathing herself, falls under the Temptation, and hath criminal Commerce with her: Uriah's Death the inevitable Consequence of this Commerce  
Page 76
- Chap. II. David takes Bathsheba to his House, and makes her his Wife. GOD sends Nathan the Prophet to rebuke him, and denounce the Divine Vengeance upon his Guilt 90
- Chap. III. Some Account of Nathan the Prophet. The Child born of Bathsheba sickens. David fasts, and humbles himself before GOD in his behalf; but to no purpose. The Child dies. David's remarkable Resignation to the Will of GOD. Solomon is born and blessed 101
- Chap. IV. The Foolishness of wicked Policy. David, upon Joab's Exhortation, goes to the Siege of Rabbah, and takes it: deposes Hannun: and puts the remaining Ammonites to Death. His Conduct in this Point justified 110
- Chap. V. Tamar is ravished, and inhumanly treated, by her own Brother. That Rape is revenged by his Death. Absalom, who slew him, flies to Geshur. Nathan's Prophecies further fulfilled 122
- Chap. VI. Joab's Device to get Absalom recalled by means of the wise Woman of Tekoah, succeeds. Being brought back to Jerusalem, he is not admitted to the King's Presence; but

- but remanded to his own House. What followed thereupon* Page 133
- Chap. VII. *David falls sick about this Time. A Digression, shewing that his Distemper was, probably, the Small pox* 145
- Chap. VIII. *Abfalom takes the Advantage of his Father's Sickness, to form a Conspiracy against him. The Methods he made use of to delude the People in his Favour* 156
- Chap. IX. *Abfalom breaks out into open Rebellion, and Ahithophel joins him. David flies from Jerusalem, puts up his Prayers to God, and is supported in his Distress* 163
- Chap. X. *Ziba's Treachery to Mephibosheth, and David's too hasty Grant of his supposed Forfeiture. Shimei curses David, who will not suffer him to be chastised. The Curses in the Psalms accounted for, from this Passage. Hushai insinuates himself into Abfalom's Favour, and, by defeating Ahithophel's Advice, saves David* 174
- Chap. XI. *Hushai sends David Intelligence of all that passed in Abfalom's Council, earnestly intreating him to pass over Jordan that very Night ; which was done accordingly. Ahithophel's sudden and sad End. Mr. Bayle's important Decision upon Hushai's Deception of Abfalom considered, with all the Deference due to it* 187
- Chap. XII. *David goes to Mahanaim, and gathers an Army. Abfalom passes the Jordan, and pitches in the Land of Gilead. David sends*

- sends out his Forces against him, under the Command of Joab, Abishai, and Ittai, Page 194*
- Chap. XIII. *David, grieving to Excess, is reproved by Joab, and brought to appear in public. Measures are concerted with Zadoc and Abiathar, for his Restoration. The King returns to his Capital* 207
- Chap. XIV. *A Contest arises between the Tribes about restoring the King. A Rebellion ensues; Amasa is commanded by David to quell it, but murdered by Joab; Sheba, the Leader of the Rebellion, takes Refuge in Abel Macha, where he is besieged by Joab: A wise Matron intercedes for the City* 213
- Chap. XV. *Judea is visited with a Famine, The Cause of the Divine Wrath. The Means and Method appointed to appease it. Mr. Chubb's Charge against David, upon this Head, considered and refuted* 230
- Chap. XVI. *David enters into new Wars with Philistia. A Conjecture concerning the Cause of them. The first and last Edition of the eighteenth Psalm (published upon this Occasion) briefly compared. A Digression upon the Usefulness of Music to form the Manners. David's last prophetic Words. A short Conjecture concerning his Worthies* 247
- Chap. XVII. *David's Numbering of the People: and the Plague which ensued* 257
- Chap. XVIII. *David's Preparations to build the Temple; his private Exhortations to Solomon, and the Princes, to carry on the Work* 268
- Chap.

- Chap. XIX. *A Dissertation upon the immense Treasures left by David, for building the Temple* Page 273
- Chap. XX. *Adonijah sets up as Heir apparent to the Throne, and asserts his Claim to it. Upon hearing of which, David causes Solomon to be anointed King* 286
- Chap. XXI. *A short Digression, being an Essay upon the Character of Bathsheba* 292
- Chap. XXII. *David calls an Assembly of his People, in which Solomon's Election to the Throne is confirmed. His Speech and Thanksgiving to God, upon that Occasion. His last Instructions to his Son Solomon* 301
- Chap. XXIII. *Some Account of the Temple-service. David's Death* 309
- Chap. XXIV. *David's Character discussed, with regard to his Polygamy, and the Murder of Uriah* 316
- Chap. XXV. *David's Character considered in Friendship, and in Enmity* 324
- Chap. XXVI. *A short Comparison of David with Alexander, Cæsar, and Scipio. His Character concludes this Work* 334



---

---

A N

# Historical Account

Of the LIFE and REIGN of

King D A V I D.

---

## BOOK III.

---

### CHAP. I.

DAVID *designs to build a Temple, but is forbidden. God's Promises to his Posterity. DAVID's Thanksgivings.*

NOW was *David at rest*, as the sacred writer informs us, *from all his enemies round about him*: and now doubtless he recollected that command of GOD to his people, in the xi<sup>th</sup> chap. of *Deuteronomy*, by his prophet *Moses*, that, *When God should give them rest from all their enemies round about, so that they should dwell in safety, then (saith Moses) there shall be a place, which the Lord your God shall choose, to cause his name to dwell there: thither shall ye bring all that I command*



you; your burnt-offerings, and your sacrifices, your tithes, &c. that is, that it should be the residence of the ark of God, and the seat of his service; consequently there should be his temple. *Jerusalem* was that chosen place. God had now given his people rest from all their enemies round about them: and therefore *David* reasonably concluded, that now was the time for erecting the temple, and establishing the service of God in all its perfection. And now, as is generally believed, he penned the xcii<sup>d</sup> *Psalms* as an hymn of thanksgiving to God, for that blessing of peace and rest bestowed upon his people. But whoever attends carefully to the style of that psalm, will, I imagine, be more inclined to believe it written in the interval between the first *Philistine* defeat, related in the ix<sup>th</sup> chapter of the last book, and their second invasion; upon their confederating anew, and gathering together to a second attempt against him.

To this, I apprehend, refer those words in the 7<sup>th</sup> verse of this Psalm: *When the wicked spring up as grass.* He had just mowed down his enemies, and they were now springing up again, like a new crop of grass from a rich field: but how flourishing soever these workers of iniquity were, *David* fully confided, that they should soon be destroyed for ever. The glory of sinners is, at best, but the flower of a withering grass: but the righteous \* shall flourish like a palm-tree; he shall grow like a cedar in Lebanon, which, at

\* Ver. 12.

the same time that it enlarges upon earth, rises towards heaven.

THE Psalm which I take to be the peculiar composition of this interval of rest, which succeeded this settlement of the ark in its place, is the lxxxiv<sup>th</sup> \* ; for the sacred historian informs us, that this settlement was no sooner over, than *David* set his heart upon building a temple to GOD; an edifice in some measure worthy of his majesty! at least, as far as earthly magnificence can attain or express. He could not bear, that his own sovereignty should be set off by a palace of cedar, whilst the ark of GOD, the emblem and

\* The author of this Psalm speaks of the altars of GOD in a manner that shews them to be then comparatively desolated.—— There were at this time two altars erected in the kingdom of *Judea* to the true GOD, but neither of them in the place of his own appointment; that at *Hebron* not attended by any appointed number of *priests*, that we know of, as that at *Gibeon* was, altho' but slenderly, and by a few; so little crowded, that the birds of the air might build unmolested in them.—— We hear only of one altar after the building of the temple; therefore this Psalm was written before that period. The author of this Psalm speaks of the tabernacles of GOD; there were two tabernacles now extant: we hear of no tabernacle after the building of the temple; therefore this Psalm was written before that period.

The author of this Psalm wishes eagerly for the *courts of the Lord*: the tabernacle had but one court; therefore his wishes must be for the courts of the temple, which were many; and as the temple was not yet extant, these wishes could only mean the author's eager desire to see that temple erected.

N. B. Since this note was written, another interpretation of the passage referred to in the lxxxiv<sup>th</sup> Psalm hath been suggested to me, by a person whose judgment hath great weight with me. In his opinion, the passage relating to the sparrow and the swallow should be thus understood; as if *David* had said, *The swallow hath an house, and the sparrow a nest, &c. but my house and my rest are with thee*; even thy altars, O Lord of hosts, my King and my God.

pledge of his presence, and throne of his earthly residence, dwelt under curtains. *David's* soul was far exalted above those groveling and abject spirits, which imagine the meanest mansions sufficient for the service of GOD; and for that reason are little solicitous to have their churches better than barns, unanxious of adding any advantages or distinctions, that tended to enlarge, to ennoble, to exalt their souls. Had *David* been in this way of thinking, it is certain, the law of *Moses* then extant, and in the hands of every *Israelite*, the priests, the *Levites*, the prophets and their schools, the altars at *Hebron* and *Gibeon*, and the tabernacles at *Gibeon* and *Jerusalem*, their service, and their attendants, might sufficiently have answered the purposes of religion, to his own people. But this was but a small part of *David's* design. His aim was, to give the worship of GOD all the dignity due to it; to diffuse the glory of GOD *throughout the ends of the earth*; that the light of true religion should rise up from *Jerusalem*, like the sun from his tabernacle; that, like that, its going forth should be from the uttermost parts of the heaven, and its circuit unto the ends of it; and that nothing should be hid from its vital and heavenly influence. This (as I elsewhere observed) appears evidently from the 1<sup>th</sup> Psalm (v. 1, 2.): *The mighty God, even the Lord, hath spoken, and called the earth, from the rising of the sun, unto the going down thereof. Out of Sion the perfection of beauty, God hath shined.*

LET us then form to ourselves the idea of a man, greatly delighted with what he had already done towards the establishment of the divine worship, and the propagation of true religion; but at the same time, under a deep sense of the deficiency of his best endeavours, and an ardent desire of doing more; filled with the image of a glorious and magnificent temple, impressed upon him by the immediate influence of the spirit of God\*; conscious of the immense sums requisite to the undertaking, and his own inability to supply them; but at the same time, well experienced, and fully confiding, in the bounty and beneficence of the Almighty to him. That GOD who had raised him from the fold to a throne, could as easily enable him to build a house for his worship, as far transcending his palace, as that did his original cottage. It is true, his country was at present poor; but it was as easy for GOD to make a poor country rich, as to fill a barren and dry valley with fountains of living water. It was a fixed principle with *David*, that he whose strength was in GOD, must be blessed (ver. 5.); and that if he had *his ways* at heart, he must *go on from strength to strength*, and find no difficulty insuperable in the prosecution of his upright purposes.

LET the reader then consider *David* thus circumstanced (as undoubtedly he was at this time); and if he be convinced from the note referred to

\* 1 Chron. xxviii. 11, 12. Here we are told, that *David* gave *Solomon* the pattern of the porch, &c. and of all that he had by the Spirit, of the house, &c.



## 6 *An Historical Account of* B. 3.

in p. 3. that this Psalm could not be written after the building of the temple, he will best judge for himself, whether it was most probably written in this situation of *David's* mind and circumstances.

THAT *David* was highly delighted with the establishment of the tabernacle, and its service, and at the same time had his heart set upon building the temple, is not to be denied. The reader then will best judge for himself, who else but *David* could cry out in that transport of delight, fervent piety, ardent desire, and earnest longing for the temple of God, *Psal. lxxxiv. 1. How amiable are thy tabernacles, O Lord of hosts!— 2. My soul longeth\*, yea even fainteth, for the courts of the Lord: my heart and my flesh crieth out for the living God.— O Lord God of hosts, hear my prayer.— O Lord, our shield, look upon the face of thine anointed.— For the Lord God is a sun and a shield: the Lord will give grace and glory; no good thing will he withhold from them that walk uprightly.*

LET us suppose then, (what is not at all unnatural) that *David*, upon conceiving this great design of building the temple, had poured out his purpose in fervent prayers to God, imploring his aid and protection, and confiding in his support, to the accomplishment of it; could any words more aptly or emphatically express the fulness of his heart upon this head, than those of this Psalm?

\* If the humble tabernacles of God were so delightful, how much more the courts of the temple in all their grandeur and glory!

LET

LET us suppose him to have communicated any psalm he composed upon this occasion, to *Nathan*, his prophet, and his friend; what other answer could the prophet make to him, on supposition that this was the very Psalm so communicated, than that which we find recorded of him 2 *Sam.* vii. 3? Let the candid reader examine and compare.

PSALMIST.

*My soul longeth, yea even fainteth, for the courts of the Lord: my heart and my flesh crieth out for the living God.——*

*Blessed is the man whose strength is in thee.——  
No good thing will he withhold from them that walk uprightly.——O Lord of hosts, blessed is the man that trusteth in thee.*

PROPHET.

*Go, do all that is in thine heart: for the Lord is with thee.*

NATHAN found that the purpose of building the temple was deep at *David's* heart; he perceived that GOD had hitherto remarkably blessed and protected him, and that *David* intirely relied upon his protection; and therefore, when he told him of his design to build the temple, he bids him *go* and *do all that* was in his heart; *for the Lord* was with him.

THIS was the decision of a prophet, in favour of *David's* purpose; but we learn from this history, that even the decisions of prophets, in favour of the best purposes, without the imme-

diate authority of GOD, are not always to be depended upon (Lines of unerring guidance are too narrow for the devious spirit of man \*): for the sacred writers inform us, that *the word of the Lord came that same night to Nathan*, informing him to this purpose, and commanding him to go and tell *David* his servant, that he approved of his intention to build him an house, but had reserved the execution of that great design for one of his sons: that, as his people had hitherto been in a fluctuating unsettled state, he had chosen to have the ark of his covenant deposited in a tabernacle, capable of being carried from place to place, as their occasions required: that he had now appointed a place for them, and would establish them, in a more settled and undisturbed condition, than had hitherto been indulged them; unmolested and unoppressed by the wicked world around them, as he then was: that as for *David* himself, GOD, who had raised him from an humble shepherd to a monarch of no mean figure and esteem in the earth, who had signally blessed him in all his undertakings, had yet a great deal of other work for him to do: that as he had hitherto subdued all his enemies before him, he would still continue to do so, (for many more yet remained to be conquered †) till they were all destroyed. — There is another reason elsewhere ‡ assigned for God's refusing to

\* *Nimis angusta res est nusquam errare.*

† This is plainly implied in that promise, 1 *Chron.* xvii. 10. *Moreover I will subdue all thine enemies.*

‡ 1 *Chron.* xxii. 1 *Kings* v.

let *David* build him an house; but as it is probable that was given at another time, it will be more properly considered in the subsequent part of this history.

THIS refusal was followed by a promise full of consolation, that God would assuredly make him an house; and when his days were fulfilled, and he should sleep with his fathers, he would set up his seed after him, *which should be of his sons*, and establish his kingdom; adding, *He shall build an house for my Name, and I will establish the throne of his kingdom for ever. I will be his father, and he shall be my son: if he commit iniquity, I will chasten him with the rod of men\*, and with the stripes of the children of men; but my mercy shall not depart away from him, as I took it away from Saul, whom I put away before thee; and thine house and thy kingdom shall be established for ever before thee†.*

THESE promises plainly respect *Solomon*, and his posterity according to the flesh, the kings of *Judah*: but there is a supplement to this account, recorded in the xviii<sup>th</sup> chap. of the first

\* It is remarkable, that the original text is, *old men*; that is, with the gentleness of men to the children of their old age.

† This is a plain indication of the immortality of the soul, and a sure promise to *David*, that he himself should see that establishment, and continuance of it; which makes that passage in the xxist Psalm composed by *David* (and, as I am fully satisfied, referring to this passage) clear and intelligible, which hath hitherto been utterly unintelligible to me. *He asked life of thee, and thou gavest him length of days for ever and ever. His glory is great in thy salvation: honour and majesty hast thou laid upon him; for thou hast made him most blessed for ever.*—



book of *Chronicles*, at the 14<sup>th</sup> verse; which contains a promise that can only respect that son of *David*, who was at the same time strictly and immediately the son of God — *I will settle him in my house\**, and in my kingdom, for ever; and his throne shall be established for evermore. And this is accordingly applied to our blessed Saviour by an angel from heaven, in the first chapter of St. *Luke's* gospel at the 32<sup>d</sup> and 33<sup>d</sup> verses: *And he shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David. And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever. And of his kingdom there shall be no end†.*

THE goodness of GOD to his servant *David* is eminently conspicuous in this message. He refused him the request which he had set his heart upon, above all other; the granting of which, I am satisfied, would have given him more solid joy, than the sovereignty of the whole earth: but he softened the refusal, by the kindest promises and assurances; by promises of signal and long continuing favours to his posterity; long continuing in earthly splendor and authority, and concluding in an eternal dominion over the church and people of God.

As soon as *Nathan* had delivered this divine message to the king, *David*, overwhelmed at

\* That by the house of GOD is meant his church, St. *Paul* fully informs us, 1 *Tim.* iii. 15. *That thou mayst know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of truth.*

† The like application is also made by St. *Paul*, *Heb.* i. 5. *And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son.*

### B. 3. *the Life of King DAVID.* II

once with gratitude and astonishment at the infinite bounty of God to him, hastens to the tabernacle, to indulge the overflowings of his heart, and pour out his acknowledgments to his Divine Benefactor. Accordingly, he sat down before the throne of God, unquestionably crouching, and sitting upon his feet, the posture of most submissive humiliation in the eastern world; and there, in broken accents of throbbing and panting gratitude, he labours out his prayers of praises and thanksgivings to his Maker, for his unbounded, unmerited, and unspeakable mercies.

*WHO am I, O Lord God—and what is my house—that thou hast brought me hitherto?—And this was yet a small thing in thy sight, O Lord God—but thou hast spoken also of thy servant's house for a great while to come\*,—and hast regarded me according to the estate of a man of high degree.—O Lord God—and what can David say more unto thee?—For thou, Lord God, knowest thy servant.—*

HERE he ceased, and paused—the style and sentence shew it—And after a while resumes his acknowledgments, in a strain, that demonstrates the broken, oppressed, unconnected condition of his thoughts, bewildered with gratitude, and an overflowing sense of the divine goodness to him.

\* It is observable, that what *Nathan* expresses by *for ever*, *David* explains by *a great while to come*; which plainly proves, that *for ever* does not always mean a perpetual duration according to the Hebrew idiom.

*FOR thy work's sake, and according to thine own heart, hast thou done all these great things—to make thy servant know—Wherefore thou art great, O Lord God! for there is none like thee, neither any God beside thee, according to all that we have heard with our ears.*

AND here his contemplation upon the grandeur and immensity of the Divine Being, and peculiar goodness to himself, carries him to consider his infinite mercies to his peculiar people: *And what one nation in the earth is like thy people Israel, whom God went to redeem, to be his own people, to make thee a name of greatness and terribleness, by driving out nations from before thypeople, whom thou hast redeemed out of Egypt, the nations, and their gods?—For thy people Israel didst thou make thine own people for ever; and thou, Lord, becamest their God.*

AND now, recollecting that it was principally for their sakes he was exalted and established in the throne, he proceeds with more confidence and earnestness to implore of GOD the completion of his promise to himself, and his house.---

*THEREFORE now, Lord, let the thing that thou hast spoken concerning thy servant, and concerning his house, be established for ever; and do as thou hast said\*.*

† *FOR thou hast confirmed to thyself thy people Israel to be a people unto thee for ever:*

\* 1 Chron. xvii. 23.

† 2 Sam. vii. 24. to the end.



*and thou, Lord, art become their God. And now, O Lord God, the word that thou hast spoken concerning thy servant, and concerning his house, establish it for ever, and do as thou hast said. And let thy Name be magnified for ever, saying, The Lord of hosts is the God over Israel: and let the house of thy servant David be established before thee. For thou, O Lord of hosts, God of Israel, hast revealed to thy servant, saying, I will build thee an house: therefore hath thy servant found in his heart to pray this prayer unto thee. And now, O Lord God, thou art that God, and thy words be true, and thou hast promised this goodness unto thy servant. Therefore now let it please thee to bless the house of thy servant, that it may continue for ever before thee. For thou, O Lord God, hast spoken it, and with thy blessing let the house of thy servant be blessed for ever. To my eye, the workings of a breast oppressed and overflowing with gratitude, are painted stronger in this prayer, than I ever observed them in any other instance. It is easy to see, that his heart was wholly possessed with a subject which he did not know how to quit, because he did not know how to do justice to his own sense of the inestimable blessings poured down upon himself, and promised to his posterity; and much less to the infinite bounty of his Benefactor. In the earnestness and contention of his prayer, I behold him in the light of Jacob wrestling with God, and crying out, *I will not let thee go, except thou bless me*; and in the fulness of his gratitude to that God, *who loaded**

*him*



him with his benefits, I imagine I behold him in the conclusion, bowing down and submitting in the words of the *iii<sup>d</sup> Psalm*, ver. 8. *Salvation belongeth unto the Lord : thy blessing is upon thy people.*

THEN, in the rapture of such transcendent, such astonishing blessings from GOD, was composed the *xxi<sup>st</sup> Psalm*; and indeed well might *David* cry out upon that glorious occasion, *The king shall joy in thy strength, O Lord, and in thy salvation how greatly shall he rejoice ! Thou hast given him his heart's desire, and hast not withholden the request of his lips. For thou preventest him with the blessings of goodness : thou settest a crown of pure gold upon his head. He asked life of thee, and thou gavest him length of days, for ever and ever.*

---

## C H A P. II.

DAVID *invades Philistia, and takes Gath, &c.---He then invades and subdues Moab.*

DAVID, having learnt from *Nathan's* answer, related in the last chapter, that altho' he was not to build a temple to GOD, yet he was appointed to subdue his enemies, and establish his people in peace and security, was naturally led to reflect, that since they were not yet in full possession of the promised land, it was his peculiar business to drive out the enemy, and settle

settle his people in it. Besides this, his son was to build a temple, which required immense sums to erect and to adorn it. The wealth of the vanquished of course becomes the victor's; and much of that in the hands of his devoted enemies, was employ'd (under the colour of religion) to the vilest purposes that can debase or deprave the human nature. What nobler resolution could be taken, than to rescue that treasure from the vilest of all uses, and apply it to the noblest? To employ the spoils of the most detestable idolatry to the establishment and enlargement of the pure and perfect worship of the only GOD?

THE *Philistines* had lately invaded *Israel* twice, and were successfully repulsed; and hostilities had now ceased on both sides, apparently by tacit consent; but, as no treaty of peace had intervened, (for no trace or hint of any such treaty is found in the sacred writers) *David* was at full liberty to renew them whenever he pleased; and therefore Mr. *Bayle* is, with great submission, very idle in his censures upon this part of *David's* conduct: and, when he is found so very uncaustical in so many decisions, the impartial reader hath an unquestionable right to suspect him in all;

*While wits and Templars ev'ry sentence raise,  
And wonder with a foolish face of praise.*

BUT to proceed:

DAVID, finding now a fit occasion of renewing hostilities against the *Philistines*, did so accordingly.

IT is obvious to observe upon this occasion, that *David*, from the constitution of his militia, had more advantages for invading his enemies, sudden and unsuspected, than any prince we read of in history : inasmuch as at the going out of one course, and the coming in of another, (month by month) forty-eight thousand men, well armed and appointed, were on foot ; and came together once every month, on one day. A number (even supposing their officers included) sufficient to undertake almost any expedition : at least, if we may rely either upon the judgment of one of the greatest captains of the last age, who thought a smaller number sufficient for the command of any one man\*, or the example of the greatest captains, and most successful armies of all antiquity. And, as this interchange of courses caused an incessant marching of the forces to and fro, on the day of the change, it was easy, under that cover, to assemble the army in one day, and in any number, and at what part of the kingdom the king pleased ; and consequently, to invade and surprize his enemies on whatever quarter he thought fit ; as I believe he surprized the *Philistines* at this time. It is true, the text only tells us, that *David smote and subdued them*. But, if we estimated the success of this expedition by the conciseness of the relator's style, we should be obliged to conclude, that he accomplished it, at least, with one degree of greater dispatch,

\* *Turenne* thought an army of thirty thousand men as much as one man could command.

than *Cæsar* did that conquest, which he relates only by those celebrated three words, *Veni, vidi, vici*\*. The truth is, the sacred historians recount expeditions in three words, which, in the hands of heathen writers, would fill volumes: but it should be observed, that they do this, from a thorough contempt of that vanity which contracted *Cæsar's* style.

THEIR business is, to illustrate the dispensations of Divine Providence, in the several instances of God's infinite wisdom, goodness, and mercy, to the sons of men; and above all, his steady rewards of righteousness, and chastisements of guilt; and to attain that end, they hasten to the events of actions and counsels, and the purposes of Providence accomplished by them; despising, for the most part, all that display of the human prudence and prowess in the conduct of them, together with the minuter circumstances of time, place, and accidents, which inlarge and imbellish the works of common writers. Hence it is that we are left utterly in the dark, with regard to the time, manner, and occasion, of *David's* commencing this war; and are only informed, that, after he had defeated the enemy, he next assaulted and took (whether by siege or storm, is not said) *Gath and her towns out of the hand of the Philistines* (1 Chron. xviii. 1.); in the original it is, *Gath and her daughters*: the taking of which places is, in the viii<sup>th</sup> chap. of the 2<sup>d</sup> book of *Samuel*, expressed by the

\* I came, I saw, I conquered.



taking of *Metheg Ammah*; which some learned men think should be translated, *Metheg* and her mother; that is, the daughter and the mother city, *Metheg*, and *Gath*, her metropolis: altho' others chuse rather to translate these words *Metheg Ammah*, *The bridle of the angle*; apprehending that *Gath* was so called, on account of its being a garison, which kept all the contiguous country of *Judea* in awe; and was now in the hands of *David*, a curb upon the *Philistines*, as it was before upon the *Jews*. This is certain, it was the metropolis of one of the five *Philistine* principalities; the seat of their kings, and the mother of giants. This also is certain, that upon the taking of it *Goliath's* family was not destroyed: for we afterwards hear of them more than once, in the course of this history. As they were a gigantic family, I imagine they might have been spared by *David*, from an uncommon strain of generosity; or as monuments of the truth and greatness of his victory over *Goliath*. I am far from pronouncing, that vanity was the motive of his mercy to that race; but this must be owned, that, if human frailty had any share in it, *David* suffered a sufficient chastisement for it; as will be seen in the sequel of this history.

DAVID next invaded and subdued *Moab*, after *Amalek*, the most antient, inveterate, and hereditary enemy of the *Jewish* race; altho' descended from *Lot* their kinsman. And altho' the *Moabites* earnestly invited *Balaam* to curse *Israel*, and confederated with *Midian* to destroy them; yet could not the *Israelites* be provoked

to do them any evil: but passed them by, unmolested; and fetched a compass round their border, rather than give them any umbrage, or diquiet, by marching thro' their country. The reason of this conduct is explained by *Moses*, in the i<sup>id</sup> chap. of *Deut.* ver. 9. where he tells us, that he received an express prohibition from *GOD*, either to distress them, or contend with them in battle, or strip them of their territories \*. But at the same time that they were commanded not to molest them, or make war against them, or take away any of their territories; they were as expressly commanded never to make peace, or enter into an alliance with them, or promote their well-being, by any means whatsoever; or so much as to admit any man of that nation into the congregation of *Israel* to the tenth generation †. Now, these are parts of the sacred history, which, in my humble opinion, demonstrate at once their own truth, and divine origin. It never yet made any part of human policy, never to have either peace or war with a neighbour nation; and much less, neither to invade or conquer a weaker hostile nation (notwithstanding the most grievous provocations) already more than half subdued by their own fears ‡, when

\* *And the Lord said unto me, Distress not the Moabites, neither contend with them in battle: for I will not give thee of their land for a possession, because I have given Ar unto the children of Lot for a possession.*

† *Deut.* xxiii. 3, 4, 5, 6.

‡ *Numb.* xxii. 3. *And Moab was sore afraid of the people, because they were many: and Moab was sore distressed because of the children of Israel.*

it could be done with great ease, and to great advantage. Now, it is demonstrable from the sacred history, that the *Jews* were commanded to hold this conduct with regard to the *Moabites*; and actually did so, where their obedience was put to the hardest trial. Nor is there any other imaginable reason, why they spared *Moab*, a weaker nation, after they had utterly defeated *Amalek*, a much stronger; and even after they had destroyed *Sihon* the oppressor of *Moab*, and made themselves absolute masters of his country. But the candid reader will please to observe, that this prohibition from Almighty God could never be intended either to hinder *Israel* from repelling a *Moabite* invasion, or retorting the injury, and chastising the authors.

WE have seen in the ix<sup>th</sup> chap. of the former book, that the *Moabites* were confederate with the *Philistines*, and other nations, in their late invasions of *Judea*: and it seems to have been *David's* policy at this time, after he had defeated and dispersed the confederate army, to invade each of those nations apart, which made it up. Accordingly, we find, that, after he had invaded and humbled *Philistia*, he smote and subdued *Moab*. Then was fulfilled that remarkable prophecy of *Balaam*, *Numb. xxiv. 17, 18.* *A sceptre shall rise out of Israel, and shall smite the corners of Moab, and destroy all the children of Sheth: and Edom shall be a possession. Seir also shall be a possession for his enemies, and Israel shall do valiantly.* Agreeably to the first part of this prediction, the text tells us, that *David smote Moab,*

*Moab, and measured them with a line, casting them down to the ground: even with two lines measured he to put to death, and with one full line to keep alive; and so the Moabites became David's servants, and brought gifts.*

FEW texts have more perplexed the learned than this. Some think, the expression of *casting them down to the ground*, alludes to an *Eastern* practice of making those who were condemned to die, lie upon their faces, till they received the executioner's stroke: And, if this was the case, then may we reasonably conclude, (inasmuch as this was no *Jewish* punishment) that *David* executed that most wise and righteous law of retaliation upon the *Moabites*, by treating them in the same manner they were wont to treat those whom they conquered. Others imagine, with more reason, that the expression of *casting down*, refers to the demolition of those forts and strong-holds which made obstinate resistance; upon the taking of which, they discriminated between those who were hardy and determined in refusing all offers of mercy, upon their submission, and those who were unwillingly with-held by their rulers and commanders from accepting the mercy offered them; saving the one, and putting the other to death. And agreeably to this sense, the *Hebrew* text may, and I think ought to be understood thus: With two lines measured he, *viz.* one \* to put

\* Such ellipses are common in the Sacred style, and must, in many instances, necessarily be understood and supplied in the same manner that I suppose this should.



to death (those obstinate few who rejected all offers of mercy); and with one full line (in the original a line of plenitude) to keep alive; that is, to save all those who would have submitted, and accepted proffered mercy, had they been suffered.

AND this interpretation is, I think, strengthened by the expressions made use of by the sacred writer on this occasion. Now, in the original, the word which we render the *corners* of *Moab*, might better be translated the *princes* of *Moab*, as the word which we render *destroy* (*destroy all the children of Sheth*) signifies in the original to *unwall*: and then the plain sense of the text will stand thus; that this sceptre, which should arise out of *Israel*, should smite the *princes*, that is, the ruling commanding part of *Moab*, and *unwall*, that is, demolish their fenced cities, or rather their fortifications. And agreeably to this interpretation, I apprehend that *David* put the commanding officers, in every city that resisted, to death, and spared the people: and it appears sufficiently from the subsequent part of the text, that they who submitted were received into mercy, and became tributary.

LET it be observed upon this occasion, that *David* was a prophet, and thoroughly versed in the Scriptures; and when he had there learnt, that a king was to arise out of *Jacob*, who should one day smite and subdue *Moab*, it was not hard for him to discern in the spirit of prophecy, that he himself was that king, especially after the message delivered to him by *Nathan*, from the  
word

word of the LORD. And there is no doubt but he executed the sentence denounced against *Moab* in the prophecy of *Balaam*, in that sense in which the spirit of GOD denounced it \*, which I apprehend to be that now explained.

BUT, supposing *David* destroyed two thirds of the *Moabites* on this occasion, and saved only one third, (for so some understand the text) the severity of this chastisement was no greater than that which GOD himself denounces again his own people for their sins, *Zech. xiii. 8.* *And it shall come to pass, that in all the land, saith the Lord, two parts therein shall be cut off, and die, but the third shall be left therein.* And why might not the sins of the *Moabites* deserve this chastisement now, as those of the *Jews* did at the time referred to in this prophecy? The greatest sins the *Jews* ever committed against GOD, were those corruptions which they copied from their neighbour-nations; the most abominable of all which were practised by the very nation we are now speaking of †; and therefore there is good reason to believe, that they now deserved the same severity of vengeance from the justice of GOD, which he afterwards inflicted upon his own people.

\* That he carefully attended to the sense of the prophecy on this occasion, may, I think, be fairly inferred both from the nature of the thing, and from the strict attention he paid to every part of the divine commands in relation to that people; for he neither distressed nor contended with them in battle, unassaulted; nor, when he conquered them in battle, did he seek their peace or prosperity, or to strip them of their lands: he contented himself with subduing and making them tributary.

† *Numb. xxv. Judges x. 6. 1 Kings xi. 7. 2 Kings iii, 27. Amos ii, 2. Ezra ix. 1.*

## C H A P. III.

DAVID conquers the Syrians and Edomites. Hadadezer proved to be the Hadad of Nicolaus Damascenus. Some Difficulties in the Sacred Text cleared.

THE next of the confederate nations invaded by *David*, after the conquest of *Moab*, were the *Syrians* of *Zobah*, or, as *Ptolemy* calls it, *Zaba*, (whose eastern border was the *Euphrates*) then under the dominion of *Hadadezer* son of *Rehob*, who seems now to have united the several lesser principalities, which subsisted there about the beginning of *Saul's* reign, into one monarchy \*: and that he was such a monarch, is clearly collected from 2 *Sam.* x. 19. where we learn, that he had several kings in subjection to him.

As *Syria* was a part of the earth early peopled after the flood, this nation hath without doubt a fair claim to the honour of great antiquity; although we cannot, with certainty, carry it altogether so high as the *Arabs* do, who pretend that *Adam* was there formed, and shew the place of his formation, near *Damascus*, together with that of *Abel's* murder.

It is, I think, agreed, that in the earlier ages of the world men were governed by the heads

\* *Hadadezer* is here called king of *Zobah*; whereas *Saul's* contest was with the kings of *Zobah*, 1 *Sam.* xiv. 47.

of families, under the name of kings; and as one of these prevailed over the rest, many principalities united made a monarchy; and monarchies have generally been established, earlier or later, in proportion to the antiquity of the nation; and the veneration paid to the founder of the monarchy frequently carried his name from father to son, and continued it down to his late posterity. This I take to have been the case of *Hadadazer*; inasmuch as *Nicolaus of Damascus* tells us of one *Hadad*, king of *Damascus*, who warred with *David*, and was defeated by him near the *Euphrates*, whose posterity were called by his name for ten generations\*. Now if this *Hadad* of *Nicolaus Damascus* be the *Hadadezer* of the Scriptures, as the circumstance of his being defeated by *David* at the *Euphrates*, demonstrates him to be, it is a fair presumption, that he was the founder of the monarchy; inasmuch as it was his name not his father's (for his father's name was *Rehob*) which was conveyed down to his posterity. And forasmuch as the founders of monarchies, if they were men of great eminence, generally became the idols of the people, under their posterity; what if this *Hadad* was originally that idol of the *Syrians*, whose statue, *Ma-*

\* *Josephus* tells us, that this *Hadad* aided *Hadadezer* against *David*; but forasmuch as the Scripture makes mention of no such man, and *Nicolaus of Damascus* says nothing of his aiding *Hadadezer*, I take this to be a mistake of that historian, which might easily be occasioned by his great distance from the times of which he wrote.



*crobius* tells † us, was adorned with rays inclining towards the earth, to express his beneficence? Especially since *Nicolaus* of *Damascus* tells us, he was the most excellent of all the *Syrian* kings: and, forasmuch as *ezer* in the *Hebrew* signifies help or aid, I submit it to the skilful in that language, whether this might not have been an epithet added to the name of that prince to signify his readiness to aid and support every one that needed his assistance; as if we should call him in our tongue, *Hadad the helper*. Now *Hadad* in the *Syrian* language is the name of the sun, and signifies in its literal construction, *one* (as the same *Macrobius* informs us): and what could be a more natural or significant emblem of a beneficent monarch, than a statue of the sun, with his rays inclining to the earth? And if the son of *Rehob* was such a prince, what name could he more naturally assume, upon his aspiring to the monarchy, than that of *Hadad*, or the sun, a most beneficent being, which sees no equal or rival in the sphere of his activity? How godlike were the character, and how glorious the condition, of kings, did ambition only incite them to superior sway, from the divine impulse to superior and more extensive beneficence! If any thing could make idolatry pardonable, such princes would; inasmuch as they are beyond all question the noblest emblems of the Divinity.

WHETHER *Hadadezer* invaded *David*, or was invaded by him, is not clear from the text,

† Lib. 1 cap. 23.

which

### B. 3. *the Life of King DAVID.* 27

which only says, that *David smote him as he went to recover his border at the river Euphrates*. Now some understand this, as if *Hadadezer* had gone to recover his border upon the confines of the *Euphrates*; in order to which, he passed, without leave given him, through the country of *Judea*; which *David* not enduring, they came to blows. Others (and as I think more truly) understand by the text, that *David* went to recover his border at the river *Euphrates*; that is, to extend his dominions as far as the grant given by God to *Abraham*, and his posterity\*, (*Gen. xv. 18.*) in these words, *Unto thy seed have I given this Land from the river of Egypt, unto the great river, the river Euphrates*.

THE particular circumstances and consequences of this engagement are no further related than this; that *David* took from him (*Hadadezer*) *a thousand chariots, and seven thousand horsemen, and twenty thousand footmen; and David houghed all the chariot-horses, but reserved of them for an hundred chariots*. That number probably was no more than was necessary for the service of his state and household. He hamstringed the horses, in obedience to the command given by God to *Joshua*, *Josh. xi. 6†*. and there is no doubt but he burnt their chariots also, in obedience to the same command; and that he did so, may, I

\* And at several times very particularly confirmed to *Moses*, *Exod. xxiii. 31.* *Numb. xxxiv.* *Deut. i. 7,* &c. and repeated to *Joshua*, *Josh. i. 4.*

† *Thou shalt hough their horses and burn their chariots with fire.*

think, be clearly inferred from the 9<sup>th</sup> verse of the xlv<sup>th</sup> Psalm, composed in thanksgiving to God upon the conclusion of this war: *He breaketh the bow, and cutteth the spear in sunder; he burneth the chariot in the fire* †. Now these are in the number of those parts of the sacred writings, which, to my apprehension, demonstrate their divine origin. It is utterly abhorrent from all the principles of human policy, to make either creatures or utensils (when once become our own secure property) either wholly useless, or less useful to all the purposes, for which either human contrivance hath fitted, or Providence appointed them. And therefore *David's* burning so many chariots, and maiming so many horses, taken from the enemy in battle, could only arise from a principle of obedience to the commands of Almighty God, expressly enjoining such a conduct to his people. Why it seemed good to infinite Wisdom to injoin it, is an inquiry foreign to my present purpose.

WHEN *Hadadezer* was defeated, the *Syrians* of *Damascus* came to his aid, and shared his fate, for *David* slew of them *two and twenty thousand men*.

† I have observed before, that it is familiar with *David* to consider a vast hostile host under the idea of a flood of waters; a noble instance of which is to be found in this psalm, v. 3. *Though the waters thereof roar and be troubled, though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof.*—And I shall only beg leave to add *David's* own comment upon it, as one of the noblest instances of the sublime the imagination can conceive, I had almost said, that heaven itself could inspire! — *The heathen raged—the kingdoms were moved—he uttered his voice—the earth melted.*

THAT the *Hadadezer* of the Scriptures is the *Hadad* of *Nicolaus Damascenus*, is, I think, clear from comparing the accounts left of both. *Nicolaus Damascenus* tells us\*, that *Hadad*, who reigned over *Damascus*, and the other parts of *Syria*, except *Phœnicia*, made war against *David* the king of *Judæa*, and tried his fortune in many battles, and particularly the last battle at the *Euphrates*, wherein he was beaten, &c. Now we learn from the Scriptures, that *Hadadezer* reigned at this Time over *Syria*, both on this and the other Side of the *Euphrates*; and we hear of no king in *Syria*, except those who were subject to him: consequently *Josephus* must be mistaken, who supposes, contrary to the authority both of *Nicolaus Damascenus*, and the Scriptures, that two powerful princes, *Hadad* and *Hadadezer*, subsisted in *Syria* at this time. Besides, we hear of no battle which *David* fought at the *Euphrates*, except that fought, as *Nicolaus Damascenus* saith, with *Hadad*; and, as the Scriptures say, with *Hadadezer*: therefore the *Hadadezer* of the Bible is the *Hadad* of *Nicolaus Damascenus*.

AND here it is very remarkable, that the authority which *Josephus* quotes upon this point, fully confirms the account left us of this matter by the sacred writers, (or rather is confirmed by it) and at the same time confutes his own.

THAT *Hadad* and *Hadadezer* were the same person, may, I think, be further manifested

\* *Josephus's* antiq. l. vii. c. 5.



from the x<sup>th</sup> chap. of the first book of *Kings*; from whence we learn that *Rezon* the son of *Eliadah* rebelled against his lord *Hadadezer* king of *Zobah* at this time, and seized *Damascus*; which plainly proves, that there was no such *Hadad* as *Josephus* supposes then reigning in *Damascus*; and grounds a fair presumption, that *Damascus* was then under the dominion of *Hadadezer*: and if so, then *Hadadezer* is that *Hadad* of *Nicolaus Damascenus*.

Now, these two passages of the sacred story throw light upon one another; one of which tells us, that the *Syrians* of *Damascus* came to the succour of *Hadadezer*; and the other, that *Rezon* fled from his master *Hadadezer*, seized *Damascus*, and set up for himself. — The *Syrians* of *Damascus*, there being no king mentioned in the Scriptures to have reigned over them at that time, the learned authors of *The Universal History* apprehended to have been a commonwealth; but I rather apprehend, from the passage before us, that they came to the aid of *Hadadezer*, because they were under his dominion; and when they were defeated, *Rezon*, taking the advantage of the reduced condition of his king *Hadadezer*, gathered up the scattered remains of the *Syrians* of *Damascus*, seized the city, and set up for himself, and reigned there, till *David* drove him thence; *Rezon* the son of *Eliadah*, (saith the text) *which fled from his lord Hadadezer king of Zobah. And he gathered men unto him, and became captain over a band, when David slew them: and they went to Damascus, and dwelt therein,*

B. 3. *the Life of King DAVID.* 31  
*therein, and reigned in Damascus, 1 Kings xi.*  
23, 24.

THE consequence of this defeat of the *Damascene Syrians* was, that *Syria of Damascus* was after some time brought under *David's* dominion; which being within the bounds of the promised land \*, *David* had a right to take into his own possession; altho' for the present he only made them tributaries: for the text informs us, that he put garisons in *Syria of Damascus*; and then adds, that the *Syrians*, by which, I apprehend, is meant the *Syrians of Damascus*, (the *Syrians* last-mentioned) *became servants to David, and brought gifts.*

How great a monarch *Hadadezer* was, and how immense the spoils which *David* took in this war, may, I think, be fairly inferred from what the sacred historian adds, that *David took the shields of gold, that were on the servants of Hadadezer, and brought them to Jerusalem.* How many these were is no-where said: nor can, in my apprehension, be clearly collected from any passage in the sacred writings; altho' the 4<sup>th</sup> ver. of the iv<sup>th</sup> chap. of *Solomon's Song* seems to ground a probability of their being a thousand: *Thy neck is like the tower of David, builded for an armoury, whereon there hang a thousand bucklers, all shields of mighty men.*

THE expression of shields hanging on a tower as *Grotius* very ingeniously imagines, alludes to the ear-rings, pendants and other

\* *Deut. i. 7. xi. 24.*

ensigns of gold, then worn by women of high rank in *Judæa*, as ornaments of the neck; and it is certain, the allusion would hold but ill, if those shields were not of gold \*.

As *Alexander the Great* had his silver shielded soldiers†; *Hadadezer*, it seems, had his golden.

IT hath been the practice of many princes to make the arms of their soldiers ornamental and precious; partly from the love of splendor and magnificence, and partly to influence the courage of those that carried them; since nothing else could secure them from becoming a property and a prey to the enemy. At least there is good reason to believe, that it was upon this principle, that great *Roman* emperor, *Alexander Severus*, instituted his *chrysaſpides*, or soldiers with golden shields (altho' historians give it another turn); since it cannot be imagined, how a prince of so much wisdom, and such severity of virtue, whose whole life was so abhorrent from every suspicion of vanity, could be acted in this point by any other principle.

BUT however that may be, no imputation of that kind (as I apprehend) lies against *David*, upon this head. Indeed, as he was not permitted to see his treasures expended upon the temple, it is not improbable, but that he suffered these

\* It may be objected, that *David* could scarce be imagined to have had a thousand shields of gold, when *Solomon*, who was much richer, had but five hundred in all; two hundred targets, and three hundred shields. I answer, That *David* might have had more, altho' he made none. Besides, *Solomon's* shields were ornaments, not of his citadel, but of his house of the forest of *Lebanon*.

† *Argyraſpides*.

shields to retain their form as long as he lived; but I think it pretty demonstrable at the same time, that he devoted them to the adorning of the temple, whenever it should be erected; inasmuch as they are not expected out of the spoils said to be spoils dedicated by him: and we hear nothing of them among the spoils of *Jerusalem*, upon the taking of the city.

IF *Hadadezer* had superfluous gold enough to shape into shields, it is highly probable the rest of his treasure must have been immense: as the quantity of brass, now taken, undoubtedly was; it being expressly said, that *from Beth and Berothai, cities of Hadadezer, king David took exceeding much brass*, 2 Sam. viii. 8. A relation, whether of the same transaction, or some other like it, is transmitted to us in the first book of *Chron.* chap. xviii. with this variation; *Likewise from Tibbath, and from Chun, cities of Hadarezer, brought David very much brass: wherewith Solomon made the Brazen-sea, and the pillars, and the vessels of brass.*

THE sacred historian next proceeds to tell us, that when *Toi*, king of *Hamath*, heard that *David* had smitten all the host of *Hadadezer*, that is, both his first army at the *Euphrates*, and that which came to his aid from *Damascus*, (for the word *all* comprehends both, and plainly implies both to have been his forces) then *Toi* sent *Joram* his son unto king *David*, to salute him; or, as the text might be otherwise understood, to make peace with him, and to congratulate him upon his victories over *Hadadezer*; which very



seasonably diverted his army from *Toi*, with whom *Hadadezer* was then at war: and partly as an acknowledgment of the deliverance wrought for him, and partly to purchase his friendship, *Toi* sent presents of a considerable value to *David*, by his son; *vessels of silver, and vessels of gold, and vessels of brass*. All which, with all the spoils won from all the neighbouring nations, all around him, the *Syrians*, the *Moabites*, the *Ammonites*, the *Philistines*, the *Amalekites*, *David*, with a bounty and a piety unprecedented, and (I am sorry to say) but rarely and poorly imitated, dedicated to God; that God, whose aid overthrew his enemies; and whose Providence *preserved him, whithersoever he went*; as the sacred historian twice observes, in the compass of a few verses.

How many battles *David* fought against the *Syrians*, the sacred historians have been no way solicitous to inform us. *Nicolaus of Damascus* tells us, that *Hadad* tried his fortune with *David* in many battles before that at the *Euphrates*, where he was beaten; and the sacred writers give us to understand, that there was one fought, as it should seem, a considerable time after this; which, altho' not so fatal to the *Assyrians*, in the event, as some of the preceding, yet more redounded to the honour of *David* as a captain, than any of them. This is sufficiently implied (I wish it were more fully illustrated) in these words of the sacred writer (2 *Sam.* viii. 13.): *And David gat him a name, when he returned from smiting of the Syrians, in the Valley of Salt,*  
eighteen

*eighteen thousand.* Now the word which we render *smiting*, is in the original, *his smiting*; which plainly shews this to have been the proper and personal action of *David*, at least so far as to imply his being present at the battle, and commanding in it; which some \* critics not carefully enough attending to, have confounded this atchievment with another of the same nature related of *Abishai* in the first book of *Chron.* xviii. 12. where it is said, that *Abishai the son of Zeruiah slew of the Edomites in the Valley of Salt, eighteen thousand.* Now the number slain in both actions being the same, the war the same, and the place of action apparently the same, critics have imagined, that *Aram* (the *Hebrew* name of *Syria*) hath been transcribed by mistake for *Edom*; a mistake, which might more easily be occasioned by the likeness of the letters א and י in the *Hebrew* tongue. And indeed, if there were no more variety in the names or the relations of the facts, than what might be occasioned by the mistake of one letter for another like it, the criticism had been well founded. But, in fact, there is a great deal; and such, as it is impossible should be the effect of any mistake†, as any man, that compares them, will quickly be convinced.

\* Or, to speak more freely, all of them that ever I met with.

† In the first place (besides the distinction last-mentioned grounded upon the letter of the text, 2 *Sam.* viii. 13.) *Edom* hath one letter in it (י) more than *Aram*: in the next place, the text 2 *Sam.* viii. hath *from Aram*—and the spoil of *Hadadazer*, &c. that of 1 *Chron.* xviii. 11. hath, *from Edom*, without any mention of *Hadadazer*. And in the last place, the text 2 *Sam.* hath *melach*; that of 1 *Chron.* *amalach*.

BUT still the question returns, How the war, place of action, and numbers slain, could be the same, and yet the actions different? I answer, That two different actions of the same kind might easily be achieved in the same war; and the numbers slain in each be nearly the same (for in such cases men count only by round numbers); and two very remote and different places may be called by the same name; which might occasion all the difficulty. And this is undoubtedly the case here, it being well known, that there were in *Syria* two *Valleys of Salt*: one in *Syria* properly so called, to the north-west, within four hours of *Aleppo*; and another, at a great distance, in *Cælosyria*, to the south-east, near *Palmyra*; in that course, which the *Edomites* should naturally be supposed to take in their march to the aid of *Hadadezer*; as that, wherein *David* is said to have slain the *Syrians*, is in that region, where the *Syrians* of *Damascus* might naturally be supposed to have assembled, to the same end: a circumstance which no critic took under his consideration (altho' there be a plain foundation for it in the *Hebrew* text, one being there called *a valley*, and the other *the\* Valley of Salt*); and which if it had been considered, (with other circumstances before-mentioned) might easily have removed all the difficulty upon this point.

IN consequence of this victory we are told, that *David* put garisons in *Edom*: *Throughout*

\* Doubtless implying some distinction then well known.

*all Edom put he garisons, and all they of Edom became David's servants:* and there is reason to believe, from the xxiid chap. of the first book of *Kings* ver. 47. that they were ruled by a viceroy under him. Then began to be fulfilled that extraordinary prediction to *Rebekah*,† when the infants struggled within her, in the time of her travail—*Two nations are in thy womb—and the elder shall serve the younger;* a prediction, which, altho' related by *Moses*, *Gen.* xxv. 23. was delivered to *Rebekah*, (and confirmed by *Isaac*\*) long before he was born; and not begun to be fulfilled till many centuries after his death.

THEN also was fulfilled that prophecy of *Balaam's*, *Num.* xxiv. *Edom shall be a possession, Seir also shall be a possession for his enemies; and Israel shall do valiantly,*

BEFORE I conclude this chapter, I must take notice, that there is one difficulty of moment yet remaining; which stands thus:—It is said, in the viiith chap. of the second book of *Sam.* ver. 14. That *all they of Edom became David's servants;* and yet in the first book of *Kings*, xi. 16. it is expressly said, that *Joab cut off every male in Edom.*

I ANSWER that the expression of *cutting off every male*, must necessarily be understood, agreeably to the practice of the *Jews*, and the commands of *GOD* to them, in relation to their enemies; which stood thus (*Deut.* xx. 10, &c.):

\* *Gen.* xxvii.



When they came up to an hostile city, they were to offer them peace, on condition that they submitted; and so to receive them as tributaries: but if they refused to submit, they were, upon taking the city, to *cut off all the males*. And so the expression relating to *Joab*, 1 *Kings* xi. must be understood; *viz.* he cut off all the males of those cities that resisted, throughout all *Edom*: for that he did not destroy all the males throughout the whole country, is evident enough from the whole tenour of the sacred history. Moreover, they who arraign *David's* mercy, in supposing him to have slain such numbers of unoffending and unresisting men, without any authority from GOD, have not, perhaps, sufficiently considered, how inconsistent it was with any degree of good policy, to lessen unnecessarily the number of his own subjects; since that were, in effect, to lessen his own tribute.

BESIDES this, *David* (as I lately observed, on a like occasion) was a prophet: and there is no question, but he well understood the prophecy of *Balaam*, in relation to his conquest over *Edom*; and executed it, according to the true meaning and intention of it. Now the prophet, after he had said, *Edom shall be a possession*, &c. adds, *Out of Jacob shall come he that shall have dominion; and shall destroy him that remaineth of the city*; that is, shall execute the commands of GOD, and cut off all those males of every resisting city in *Edom*, that survive the taking of it. And therefore they who think the execution upon the *Edomites* extended further, interpret

terpret the text neither agreeably to mercy, policy, prophecy, or historical truth.

IF it be still thought, that this was making war with great severity; especially, if renouncing their religion was (as it is generally believed) one condition exacted by the *Jews*, upon the submission of the idolatrous nations, with whom they warred; I answer, that such conditions were no way hard upon the aggressors, as the *Edomites* now were: and as to the condition of renouncing the abominations of their idolatry, (since they did not oblige them to become *Jews*) that, in reality, is little more than *Gelo* exacted of the *Carthaginians*, when he conquered them; *viz.* that they should no more sacrifice their children to *Saturn*\*.

LET me be indulged to close this chapter, with a short conjecture in relation to *Abishai's* defeat of the *Edomites*, in the *Valley of Salt*, &c.

WE are told in the xth chap. of the first book of *Kings*, That *Hadad* stole away into *Egypt* at the time that *Joab* went up to bury his dead. In the absence of *Joab*, the command of the army naturally devolved upon *Abishai* his brother. That *Joab* took with him some forces to bury his dead, is not to be doubted; and that some part of the country was thereby left unguarded, is evident enough from *Hadad's* escape

\* *Esau* having married two wives out of one of the accursed nations, (the *Hittites*) his posterity the *Edomites* fell early into all their corruptions; of whom *Moses* saith, (*Deut.* xii. 31.) Every abomination to the Lord, which he hateth, have they done unto their gods. For even their sons and their daughters they have burnt in the fire to their gods.

in that interval. What then can be more natural, than to suppose, that the *Edomites*, taking advantage of *Joab's* absence with a part of the army, attempted upon *Abishai* in that interval; and were defeated by him in the *Valley of Salt*?

OR suppose *Abishai* to have commanded a separate army from that of *Joab's*; or to have been upon his march towards him, with new supplies (which I rather imagine to have been the case); nothing was more natural than for the *Edomites* to make the same attempt upon him, in the absence of his brother, to intercept the reinforcement; as *M. Livius* intercepted that which *Asdrubal* was bringing to the aid of his brother *Hannibal*—(*Liv.* l. xxvii.)

AND now did *David*, as I am well satisfied from the genius of the composition, sing out triumphantly, and with a new introduction, suited to the occasion, *Psalms* cviii. what, in the beginning of his reign, he sang only in a spirit of prophecy; *God has spoken in his holiness, &c.* — *I will divide Shechem, &c. Moab is my wash-pot, over Edom will I cast out my shoe\**; upon *Philistia* will I triumph.

It evidently appears from the beginning of this Psalm, that *David* was then in triumph over the hostile nations: *My heart is ready, O*

\* Casting the shoe upon a piece of ground, I take to be the ancient form of taking possession among the Jews, perhaps with some allusion to that promise of God to *Moses*, and of *Moses* to *Israel*, *Deut.* xi. 24. *Every place, whercon the soles of your feet shall tread, shall be yours, &c.*

God—I will sing, and celebrate even my own glory. Awake, lute, and lyre; I will early awake myself. I will confess thee among the people, O God; and sing thee among the nations (for great above the heavens is thy mercy; and to the skies thy truth). Be exalted above the heavens, O Lord; and over the whole earth thy glory! That thy beloved may be delivered, save with thy right-hand, and hear me. God hath spoken in his holiness, &c. I will rejoice, I will divide Shechem, and mete out the valley of Succoth, &c. Moab is my wash-pot.—This is an introduction, very different from that distressful complaint, in which the same words are prefaced in the 1x<sup>th</sup> Psalm: which plainly shews David's situation to be now very different from what it was at that time.—

How finely is the noblest spirit of piety, and of poetry, united in this hymn! How delicate this address to his lyre, to be ready at his call! to be early awake and prepared for it; for he was resolved to be stirring betimes. The greatness of the occasion required it; which was no less, than to sing out the praises of the Almighty, and celebrate his glory to the whole world around him! Filled with this glorious design, which had taken intirepossession of his heart, he immediately declares he will execute it:—*I will confess thee among the people, O God; and sing thee among the nations!* And, forgetting his address to his lyre, instantly breaks out into raptures upon the truth and mercy of his God—*Great above the heavens is thy mercy, and to the æther \*thy truth!* al-

\* So I think the word בְּחִי should be rendered; which, in the root, signifies *to break in the finest parts.*



cluding doubtless to the purity and transparency of that heavenly substance, which render it the aptest and finest emblem of truth.

---

## C H A P. IV.

### *A short Account of DAVID's Ministers--- His Cherethites, and Pelethites.*

THE sacred historian, having crowded so many great events (recounted at large in the two last chapters of this history) into the compass of a few lines, rests a little, to reflect upon the state of *David's* kingdom, at this time. He had now subdued his enemies all around him, and stretched his dominion nearly to the bounds assigned to it by Almighty God; and was thoroughly established in it. *David* (saith the sacred writer) *reigned over all Israel; and David executed judgment and justice unto all his people.*

Now it was, in all probability, that the divine wisdom and goodness vouchsafe to admonish him, in that noble lesson to princes, recounted in his last words (2 Sam. xxiii. 3.): *The God of Israel said, the Rock of Israel spake to me, He that ruleth over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God.* The sacred writer, inspired by the same Spirit, no sooner tells us of *David's* reigning over all *Israel*, but he immediately adds his sitting in judgment, and distributing justice to his people; well implying, that this  
was

was truly to be a king, to protect his people from their enemies abroad, and to administer the civil government with justice at home. Then did he sing in the xcix<sup>th</sup> Psalm, ver. 4. *The king's strength also loveth judgment: thou dost establish equity; thou executest judgment and righteousness in Jacob.*

WHOEVER peruses this Psalm, will find, that *David* here, as every-where else, considers GOD as the King of *Israel*, and himself only as his deputy. To this purpose are those expressions in the beginning of this Psalm; *The Lord reigneth—the Lord is great in Sion.*—

IT is true, *David* delighted to exert all the power that GOD had given him, to its true purposes: *The king's strength also loveth judgment*: but it was in reality GOD that executed them all—*Thou dost establish equity; thou executest judgment and righteousness in Jacob.* Then follows the one inference always drawn from every position of *David's*:—That GOD is ever to be worshipped and glorified: *Exalt ye the Lord our God, and worship at his foot-stool: for he is holy.*

BUT to proceed:

THE sacred writers no sooner give us an account of *David's* executing judgment and justice, but they immediately add a list of the great officers then employed by him. For, as a principal part of the king's wisdom, as well as his felicity, consists in the choice of able ministers, to discharge the great offices of the state; the sacred historians seem to have thought it a kind of justice due to *David's* ministers, to record their names

names to all future generations. And therefore they inform us, that *Joab the Son of Zeruiah* \* (the king's near kinsman) *was over the host*; that is, was, in the phrase of our times, captain general; and *Jehoshaphat, the son of Akiud, recorder* †; that is, as it is generally believed, remembrancer, or writer of chronicles; an employment of no mean estimation in the eastern world, where it was customary with kings to keep daily registers of all the transactions of their reigns. A trust, which whoever discharged to purpose, must be let into the true springs and secrets of action; and consequently, must be received into the inmost confidence.

THE persons next recounted as of eminence in the court of *David*, at this time, are two priests; *Zadoc the son of Abitub, and Abimelech, the son of Abiathar*. It seems, it made no part of *David's* politics, to exclude the priesthood from any share in the administration of civil affairs; and much less from advising even in things ecclesiastical. He thought it no part of true political wisdom to preclude himself from the advice and assistance of an order of men, who, from the nature of their office, education, and institutions, must, in the ordinary course of things, be some of the wisest and most virtuous (not to say the most religious) men in the realm.

\* *Zeruiah* was the king's sister.

† They who imagine that this was an office like that of lord chancellor with us, seem to forget the constitution of the *Jewish* commonwealth, where there was no room for such an employment.

I am far from insinuating, that this order of men should preside in the affairs of all wise and well-ordered states. That extreme should, I think, be avoided, as much as this: but certainly there is a temperament of true wisdom between both; at least in all societies, where true religion is deemed an essential of true policy.

WHY *Abiathar* the high-priest, who had formerly so well deserved of *David*, was not now in the first degree of favour with him, is not easy to say. Possibly *David* had, by this time, discerned in him something of that busy, factious, turbulent spirit, which discovered itself so openly in the close of his reign: a spirit, the most alien from the true character of God's ministers; the most unbecoming, and most invidious, that can be imagined; and such, as from the insinuations of designing men, and the errors of the undiscerning, (who always charge the vices of men upon their professions) hath more injured that sacred order, than all the other machinations of their enemies.

THE next officer in this honourable list of *David's* ministers, is *Seraiah the scribe*; supposed to be the king's secretary of state, or prime counsellor in the law\*: and the next, the captain of his life guard; *Benaiah the son of Jehoiada, a valiant man of Kabzeel*. *Benaiah was one*

\* Dr. Patrick saith, that as the Hebrew word *sopher*, which we translate *scribe*, imports something of learning, (as the word *scribe* in the new testament doth) he takes him to have been the king's prime counsellor in the law: and others think, there were two of this character; an ecclesiastical, and a civil,



of *David's* three worthies of the second order; eminent for many great exploits, of which three only are particularly recounted by the sacred historians. He slew two lion-like \* men of *Moab*: he slew a lion, in that season when lions are fiercest, most hungry, and, of consequence, most eager for prey, *in the snow* †; and he slew a large and well-made *Egyptian*, armed with a spear, tho' he himself had nothing in his hand but a staff; he assaulted, disarmed him, and slew him with his own weapon. There seems to have been something in the fortitude of *Benaiah* similar and congenial to that of *David*: and possibly that was the reason why he made him commander of the *Cherethites* and *Pelethites*, the king's life-guard.

I NOW imagine I hear the curious reader calling upon me, to give some account of these prætorian guards ‡ of *David's*, his *Cherethites* and *Pelethites*, before I proceed further: and I shall gratify it, the best I can, in a few words. And as none of the conjectures of the critics upon this point have given me satisfaction, the reader will not, I hope, be displeased to have one or two of another kind, laid briefly before him.

\* The *Hebrew* word signifies a lion of GOD; that is, a very great lion; so probably the *Moabites* called a very valiant man then, as the *Arabs* do now.

† The text tells us. He slew him *in the midst of a pit*; or, as the original word may otherwise be rendered, *a cave*, to which he probably traced him in the snow, and where he must fight him to great disadvantage.

‡ *Josephus* calls them *σαρωματοφύλακες*, keepers of the body,

THAT *Cherethite* is another word for *Philistine*, appears clearly from *Zephaniah* ii. 5. *Woe unto the inhabitants of the sea-coasts, the nation of the Cherethites! the word of the Lord is against you, O Canaan, the land of the Philistines*\*.—That *David's* guards were native *Philistines*†, of his mortal enemies, is not to be imagined; even altho' we should suppose them proselytes. For how could their being proselyted more effectually recommend the fidelity of any men to him, than being natives of his own country, and known and tried subjects? The only question then is, why any of his own subjects should be called *Cherethites*‡; and the answer to that is obvious. They were called so, from their having gone with him into *Philistia*, and continued there with him, all the time that he was under the protection of *Achish*. These were they, who resorted to him from the beginning, in his utmost distress; and clave to him in all his calamities:

\* Also from *Ezek.* xxv. 16.

† Some imagine that he chose his guards from amongst the *Philistines*, as some *European* princes do theirs from the *Swiss*; but they forget, that the *Swiss* are Christians, and either Popish or Protestant princes may chuse from amongst them, troops of their own religion; which was not the case of *David* with the *Philistines*. In the next place, foreign troops have, I believe, generally been deemed the proper guards of tyrants, who did not dare to trust their lives to their own subjects.

‡ The *Philistines* are considered by *Jeremiah* as strangers, from the isle of *Caphthor*: and the septuagint always translate the word *Philistine*, by that of stranger, ἀλλόφυλος. And the isle of *Caphthor* is believed by learned men, and I think proved by *Calmet*, to be the isle of *Crete*. So that *Cerethim* or *Crethim*, allowing for the *Hebrew* idiom, is literally *Cretans*, or *Philistines* from *Crete*.

and

and it is no wonder, if men of such approv'd fidelity were in a more intimate degree of favour and confidence with the king; and enjoyed, among other privileges, an exemption from the authority of the captain general, and were placed under peculiar commanders. And I believe it will be no uncommon thing in the history of any country, to find legions, and bands of soldiers, denominated, not from the place of their nativity, but that of their residence—as general *Monk's* troops, who sojourned with him in *Scotland*, were called *Coldstreamers*, (and some of the same corps, I believe, are still called by the same name) from a place in *Scotland*, where they had resided for some time; notwithstanding that they were native *English*.

NOW as the *Cherethites* were, as I apprehend, that body of troops which came to *David* from the beginning, and went with him into *Philistia*; the *Pelethites* I apprehend to have been the body of troops, made up of those valiant men, who resorted to him when he was there (I mean, when he resided at *Ziklag*, but still under the protection of *Achish*); among whom I find one *Pelet*, the son of *Izmaeth*, (1 *Chron.* xii. 3.) who, as I apprehend, became their captain; and from whom they were called *Pelethites*; as the soldiers disciplined by *Fabius* and *Iphicrates*, were called *Fabians* and *Iphicratians*\*; and as, under the later emperors, the soldiers were commonly denominated from their commanders:

\* *Cornel. Nep. in Iphicrate.*

unless we suppose them rather denominated from *Peleth*, the son of *Jonathan*\*, who was of the king's own tribe.

NOW as the *Cherethites* adhered to *David*, and followed his fortune from the beginning, they justly held the first degree of favour with him: and therefore they are always placed before the *Pelethites*, who only resorted to him when he was in *Ziklag*; and for that reason were only intitled to the second degree of favour.

---

## CH A P. V.

*DAVID inquires after Saul's Posterity, and finds Mephibosheth, a surviving Son of Jonathan's, whom he treats as his own.*

**D**AVID, now, once more, enjoyed a short interval of peace, like a gleam of sun-shine in the intermittings of a storm; and he employed it as became him. His prosperity had hitherto in no degree overset him; on the contrary, the blessings of GOD upon him, made him every day better. His gratitude to his Divine Benefactor had lately exerted itself in a resolution of building a most magnificent temple to his honour, from a noble purpose of giving such a display of glory to the worship of the true GOD; as the world had hitherto (as far as I can find)

\* 1 Chron. ii. 33.



conceived no notion of: and he had thus far made a noble provision for the work. Religion was his first care; and friendship now became his second. He recollected the strong and solemn ties of friendship between him and *Jonathan*, confirmed by the most sacred oaths and engagements; and his present retirement from the hurry and din of war left him at leisure to reflect upon them, and take proper measures to fulfil them.

It is not, I think, to be imagined, but that he well knew there yet survived one of that dear friend's sons: and I believe the humane and religious reader will own, that he hath often felt pangs at his heart, for *David's* so long seeming neglect of that most valuable and amiable friend's only son. But I believe it will appear to him, upon better inquiry, that since he knew him to be under the protection of a very considerable family, where he wanted no necessary or convenience of life, looking out for a rival to his throne, before it was thoroughly established to him, was not altogether so consistent with the principles of political prudence. And perhaps this is one reason, why the sacred writer lets us know, that his throne was now thoroughly established, before he made any inquiry after *Saul's* posterity. For when he hath informed the reader upon this head, and recounted the train of *David's* officers and ministers, he immediately subjoins an account of this inquiry; telling us, that *David said, Is there yet any that is left of the house of Saul, that I may shew him kindness*

# B. 3. *the Life of King DAVID.* 51

*kindness for Jonathan's sake?* And, hearing of a servant, that had belonged to *Saul*, whose name was *Ziba*, he sent for him, and inquired whether any yet remained of his master's family, that he might do them good offices. The expression in the original is very remarkable; *Is there not yet any of the house of Saul, that I may shew the kindness of God unto him?* That is, that he might treat him with a benignity resembling that of Almighty God; who continues his kindness even to the descendants of those that love him. And *Ziba* informed him, that *Jonathan* had yet a son, lame on his feet, whose name was *Mephibosheth*; and the king, inquiring where he was sent, and brought him from the house of *Machir*, the son of *Ammiel*, a very considerable and wealthy man\* in *Lodebar*, a remote corner of the country, beyond *Jordan*; where *Mephibosheth* judged he might be concealed with more secrecy and security: but *David's* friendship found him out in his retirement, and called him to court.

Poor *Mephibosheth* had contracted a lameness, from the fall he got, when his nurse was running away with him, after the defeat of mount *Gilboa*; and so was in the condition of *Palæmonius*, in *Orpheus's Argonautics*, v. 209.

Σίβετο δὲ σφύρα διῶτα, πώδας δ' ἐκ ἥν ἀρηρώς.  
*Lame of both legs, and fited ill with feet.*

\* That he was so, appears from 2 *Sam.* xvii. 27, 28. where we find him and *Barzillai* supplying the king with great plenty of all necessaries.

When he appeared before *David*, he fell upon his face, and did him reverence. Our account of this interview is very short; but I imagine, from the nature of the thing, that it must have been very tender and affecting on the part of *David*; as it was apparently not without terror, on the part of *Mephibosheth*: however we are only told, that the king called him by his name, and spoke kindly to him, bidding him fear nothing, and assuring him of his favour, and declaring that he would treat him as one of his own children. *Mephibosheth*, (saith he) *fear not; for I will surely shew thee kindness for Jonathan thy father's sake; and will restore thee all the land of Saul thy father; and thou shalt eat bread at my table continually.* In return to which, *Mephibosheth* bowed himself before the king, with expressions of the utmost gratitude and humility: *What is thy servant, that thou shouldst look upon such a dead dog* (that is so abject and so insignificant a creature) *as I am?*

THE king then sent for *Ziba*, and told him he had given *Mephibosheth* all that belonged to *Saul*, and to all his house; appointing him at the same time to the tillage and culture of the land, and ordering him to bring in a proper portion of the fruits of the earth to his master, by way of rent; that is, as *Grotius* and *Dr. Trapp* observe, he made *Ziba Mephibosheth's colonus partiaris*, his farmer, upon the terms of bringing in to his master, yearly, half the annual produce of grain and fruits. And from the character and condition of that man, at this time, *David*, in  
all



all appearance, could not have chosen a fitter person, on whom to devolve that trust. He was an old servant of the family, and then deemed a faithful one: he was in the secret of *Mephibosheth's* concealment, and consequently confided in by him: and besides this, the text tells us, that he had fifteen sons, and twenty servants, by whose aid he could occupy the ground to more advantage; which seems to be a principal reason why *David* employed him. *Thou therefore, (saith the king) and thy sons, and thy servants, shall till the land for him; and thou shalt bring in the fruits, that thy master's son may have food to eat, viz. both for himself and his household (for Mephibosheth had now a son, whose name was Micah, and doubtless a family also); but Mephibosheth thy master's son shall always eat bread at my table.*

To this command of the king, *Ziba* professed a ready obedience: *According to all that my lord the king hath commanded his servant, so shall thy servant do.* And whilst he was saying this, the king's heart overflowing with joy at the thoughts of having it in his power to do honour to any of *Jonathan's* posterity, interrupts him with a second declaration in his favour: *As for Mephibosheth, he shall eat at my table like one of the king's sons.*

THE text then adds an account of *Mephibosheth's* having a young son at this time, and of all *Ziba's* family immediately becoming his servants; and concludes with these words: *So Mephibosheth dwelt in Jerusalem; for he did eat con-*



*tinually at the king's table, although he was lame* (for so I think it should be translated) *on both his feet*; that is, altho' his figure was not such as might grace a king's table.

THE observation is obvious, and few of the critics have failed to make it, that, from the number of servants employed to occupy *Mephibosheth's* estate, it should seem to have been very considerable; but how considerable, I cannot take upon me so much as to conjecture.

THERE is another observation seemingly as obvious, and that is, that nothing could be a better-judged beneficence, or a surer or more refined proof of eternal friendship to *Jonathan*, than *David's* tying down his son to that way of living with him, and with his children, which would give him a thousand daily opportunities of testifying his gratitude, his tenderness, his affection for the best of friends; and was at the same time the most natural means to perpetuate this friendship, and to propagate it to both their posterities.

IF any man doubt, whether this conduct should be placed to the score of a most refined and exalted virtue in *David*, let it at last be numbered among that prince's peculiar felicities.

IT is not, I think, to be doubted, that most of *David's* Psalms were written as occasions required. The sacred historian informs us, that *David* had employed this interval of peace, in judgment and justice to his people: he very well knew, that mercy was often an essential of justice, and at all times its most heavenly office;  
and

and that he owed this duty to himself, as much as to any of his subjects; for *mercy and truth uphold the throne*. He well knew his solemn engagements to *Jonathan*: Should he not do justice to them? His meanest subjects shared the blessings of his mercy: Should the son of *Jonathan* be precluded from it?

LET it then be presumed, that *David*, in this way of thinking, published his resolution of shewing kindness to the seed of *Saul*: Could any thing be more natural, than for the enemies of that house, and all the court-favourites, to be immediately alarmed, as one man? Could any of them hope to be the king's favourite, upon the same foot with the son of *Jonathan*? Who would be so favourably and so partially listened to? Was he to eat and to drink with the king every day of his life, to have every day an opportunity of insinuating himself into his good graces, to lie in his bosom, and to have his ear in his most open and unguarded hours? What a load of envy and obloquy must this draw upon poor *Mephibosheth*? And how naturally would calumny entail all *Saul's* vices upon him on this occasion? pride, inconstancy, treachery.

ON the other hand, it may easily be imagined, what the partizans of the house of *Saul*, and enemies to *David*, would say upon this occasion—that all these fair pretences and promises in favour of *Saul's* family, were but a specious artifice to get the true heirs to the crown into his hands; and that when he once had them in his power, he would soon find means

to rid himself of them. Suppose this to be the true state of the case, when the king published his resolution of taking *Mephibosheth* into favour, as I think, from the nature of the thing, it must be; could any thing be more natural than for *David* to publish such a declaration on that occasion, as should vindicate his own integrity, terrify treachery, and discountenance calumny?

Now suppose we find an authentic declaration of *David* to this purpose, prefaced with an appeal to God, for his love of mercy, justice, and integrity; and publishing to the whole world his abhorrence of villainy, treachery, calumny, and pride; and professing that he would to the utmost of his power, discountenance and destroy all men of that character; as he would, on the contrary, favour and protect all those that were truly religious and faithful: I say, suppose such a declaration as that were now extant; to what æra or event of *David's* life could we so naturally refer it, as to this of receiving *Mephibosheth* into favour?

Now it is beyond all doubt, that such a declaration is still extant, and set forth at large in the ci<sup>th</sup> *Psalms*; as the reader will find from a short perusal of these several parts of it: *My song shall be of mercy and judgment; unto thee, O Lord, will I sing—I hate the sins of unfaithfulness; there shall no such cleave unto me—Who so privily slandereth his neighbour, him will I destroy—Who so hath also a proud look, and high stomach, I will not suffer him. Mine eyes look upon such as are faithful in the land, that they may dwell*



*dwell with me. Whoso leadeth a godly life, he shall be my servant. There shall no deceitful person dwell in my house: he that telleth lyes shall not tarry in my sight. I shall soon destroy all the ungodly, that are in the land; that I may root out all wicked doers from the city of the Lord.*

How noble a declaration was this in a great king! and how worthy the imitation of all the princes of the earth! and how noble a manner was this of publishing declarations to his people, in solemn and sublime hymns to almighty GOD; set to suited music, and sung with joy and transport through the land! at once vindicating innocence, and propagating piety! Let this again be numbered among the felicities peculiar to *David*.

## CH A P. VI.

*DAVID's Embassadors abused by the Ammonites.—A War ensues.*

SOME time after the event last related, a neighbour prince, *Nabash* king of the *Ammonites*, died, and *Hanun* his son succeeded him in the throne.

DAVID, it seems, had received some favours from *Nabash*; but when, or of what kind, is not known: some imagine he had kindly entertained some of *David's* family, when others of them were cruelly treated by the king of *Moab*, under whose protection they were placed: and  
some



some imagine, that he had kindly intreated *David* himself, when the first *Achish* had driven him away from his court.

As *Nabash* was at mortal enmity with *Saul*, it is very probable, that he took any occasion of treating *David* as well as he could, out of resentment to *Saul* their common enemy. But, whatever the motives of this kindness might be, (which are not always to be too nicely scanned) *David* thought himself bound to make the best return he could to it; and accordingly sent ambassadors, to make his compliments of condolence to *Hanun*, and to congratulate him upon his accession to the crown.

WHEN they arrived, the princes of *Ammon* (from what motive is not mentioned) persuaded the king, that these men, apparently sent to do him honour, were not so properly ambassadors as spies, and that their business was to inquire and to search out the true state of his capital; that so, when a proper occasion offered, they might more easily and effectually assault and destroy it.

THE king, too easily yielding to this insinuation, repented this supposed design of *David's*, much more than he should have done, had he known it to be real: and accordingly resolved to do his ambassadors the greatest indignities he could devise. And what these were, we are thus informed: *Hanun* (saith the text) took *David's* servants, and shaved off the one half of their beards, and cut off their garments in the middle. And we are given to understand, that they did this in such a manner, as to expose their nakedness,

THE

THE wearing of long beards, and long garments, was then, as it still is, the fashion of the East, where they were deemed badges of honour; and consequently the cutting off and curtailing of either, regarded as the greatest indignity; nay, in some places, the cutting off the beard was not only looked upon as matter of the highest reproach, but also of the severest punishment. So it was antiently among the *Indians*, and is at this day among the *Persians*\*. And it was one of the most infamous punishments of cowardice in *Sparta*, that they who turned their backs in the day of battle, were obliged to appear abroad, with one half of their beards shaved, and the other unshaved†. And as the *Spartans* are said by *Josephus* to be descended from the *Jews*, possibly this punishment might have been originally derived from them: and if so, then this indignity to *David's* ambassadors, who represented his person, might have been intended as a brand of cowardice upon him. This only is certain, that insult and contumely were added to the indignity: half the beard was cut off, to make them look ridiculous; and half the robe, to make their figures at once more contemptible and indecent; for as breeches made then no part of the Eastern dress, those parts were of necessity exposed, which decency dictates to conceal.

BUT these indignities were not only insults upon the person of *David*, in those of his em-

† See Dr. *Patrick's* comment upon this passage, vol. II. p. 302.

\* *Plut. in Agesilaus.*

bassadors, but also upon his religion \*, which prohibited the cutting off any part of the beard †: and if this prohibition respected the practice of the heathen, who were wont to make an offering of their hair, or beard, to the demons, in behalf of their deceased friends; this insult upon the embassadors probably meant, that these men, who came to bewail *Nabash's*, death, should make an offering of their beards in his behalf.

SOME think *David* wrong in this conduct, and apprehend that he should have had no commerce with this *Ammonite* king ‡, (*Nabash*) who, it must be allowed, was a monster of cruelty §. But however that may be, this we learn from it, that no demerit or vileness in the author of a benefaction did, in *David's* estimation, cancel the gratitude due for it.

WHEN *David* heard of the treatment his embassadors had received, who did not know how to return, and were ashamed to shew their faces, under the confusion of the indignity done them; he sent to meet them, and directed them to tarry at *Jericho*, till their beards were grown, and then return.

As *Jericho* had not been rebuilt since the day it was miraculously overthrown, (*Josh. vi.*) the

\* They probably exposed their nakedness, to shew their circumcision.

† So Dr. *Patrick* understands by the text, *Levit. xix. 27. Neither shalt thou mar the corners of thy beard.*

‡ Being prohibited, as they apprehend, by that precept in relation to the *Ammonites* and *Moabites*, *Deut. xxiii. 6. Thou shalt not seek their peace, nor their prosperity, all thy days for ever.*

§ 1 Sam. xi.



king rightly and humanely judged, that his ambassadors would be glad to hide their shame, and conceal themselves to more advantage, in the desolations of that city, till their beards were grown\*; nor could any thing be better judged, than this anxiety of *David's* to prevent their being exposed. He well knew, that the dignity of the most excellent things and persons greatly suffers by being once seen in a ludicrous light, that is, in their most opposite extreme; because ideas are then associated in the minds of the spectators, which perhaps can never after be wholly parted †.

How *David* resented the treatment his ambassadors had received, the sacred historians have not thought fit expressly to inform us: but if we

\* It should seem from the text, that the ambassadors had taken refuge there, before *David* sent to them, to tarry there. Possibly *Jericho* might have been then pretty much in the same condition in which Mr. *Baumgarten* found it in the beginning of the fifteenth century. He tells us, *Zaccheus's* house was the only house then standing there, and even that without a roof. He then adds, 'There are round about, about a dozen of small cottages, if I may properly call them so, for nothing of building is to be seen in them, being only fenced in with tall hedges of thorns, having within a large place for cattle to stand and be shut up in; but in the middle they have huts or tents, where men used to shelter themselves and goods from the inclemency of the sun and rain.'

*Churchill's Travels*, vol. I. p. 420.

† And therefore I am astonished how any man of humanity (to throw reason and virtue out of the question) could make that ridicule the test of true excellence, which murdered the best man of the Heathen world; which first debased the dignity of *Socrates* in the eyes of the vulgar, and then brought him to the bar, and to the hemlock! for if *Aristophanes* had not been suffered to ape his person and dress, and ridicule him, in the *Clouds*, *Anytus* and *Melitus* would never have dared to have called him to the bar as a malefactor.



may be allowed to reason from his conduct, in all appearance, he considered it as an effect of youthful vanity and rashness in *Hanun*; and so waited to see whether he would take any measures to repair and expiate the injury: for we hear of no warlike preparations made by him, till the *Ammonites* had first hired their confederates, and taken the field. For they, well knowing what they deserved from *David*, set themselves instantly to support what they had done, by dint of arms; and accordingly, not finding themselves singly sufficient for the forces of *David*, the sacred historian informs us, (2 Sam. x.) that *they sent and hired the Syrians of Bethreboh, and the Syrians of Zoba, twenty thousand footmen; and of king Maacah, a thousand men; and of Ishbosh, twelve thousand men:* and we learn from the first book of *Chronicles* xix. 6, 7. that *Hanun and the children of Ammon sent a thousand talents of silver to hire them chariots and horsemen out of Mesopotamia, and out of Syria-Maacah, and out of Zoba. So they hired thirty and two thousand chariots\**, and the king of *Maacah*, and his people, who came and pitched before *Medeba*;

a

\* Some have thought this number of chariots too great: but I own I cannot think so; considering the sum expended, the country and the age in which they were hired, which knew no other use of horses in battle, but exercising them in their chariots; and therefore the same word (רֶכֶב, *receb*) in the *Hebrew*, signifies horseman, and charioteer: and we find a greater number of horsemen slain in a subsequent battle. They that argue against this great number of chariots, ground themselves upon the practice of the subsequent ages, when chariots were much less in use.—But after all, the same word, *receb*, (I mean the same radicals differently

a city supposed by most critics to be upon the borders of *Ammon*, but in reality in the tribe of *Reuben*, *Jos. xiii. 16.* contiguous to which was a large plain, very convenient for the enemy to draw up their chariots upon it in battle-array.

THITHER the *Ammonites*, also gathering together from their several cities, resorted. *And when David heard of it* (the text tells us) *he sent out Joab, and all the mighty men, against them.* It is, I think, evident from hence, that *David* waited to see how *Hanun* would conduct himself on this occasion, before he sent out an army against him. Nay, I am, for my own part, satisfied, from the *xciv<sup>th</sup> Psalm*, (which I apprehend to have been written upon this occasion) that he waited till their extravagance had carried them to such lengths of outrage, as were no longer to be endured; till they wasted his country, and murdered his subjects. And to this, I apprehend, refer these words (*ver. 5, 6. of this psalm*); *They break in pieces thy people, O Lord, and afflict thine heritage: they slay the widow and the stranger, and murder the fatherless\**.

It  
rently pointed) signifies also chariot and charioteer: and therefore I see no reason why the text should not as well be understood of thirty thousand charioteers, and perhaps better than of so many chariots: and then the number of chariots cannot be supposed to be more than fifteen thousand at most, supposing but two men in a chariot; and if you suppose more, the number of chariots must be so much the less. And besides all this, it should be considered, that this is that land, from whence *Isaiah* tells us the house of *Jacob* was replenished; and therefore what he there says of the *Jews* (*Isa. ii. 7.*) was more strictly true of the *Syrians*; *Their land is also full of horses, neither is there any end of their chariots.*

\* Whoever considers the length of way the *Syrians* were to march to the aid of the *Ammonites*, upon the confines of *Judea*, will

IT appears from many passages in the *Psalms*, (and some in this history) that it was *David's* fixed principle never to indulge his revenge; but refer himself wholly to GOD upon all such occasions. And it appears from this part of the sacred history, that he took no step against *Hannun*, till two great armies were formed, and in the field, against him, He then ordered out his forces against them, rather to repel an invasion, than revenge an injury.—And I am satisfied, the reason why he sent out these forces under the command of *Joab*, rather than conduct them himself, was, because that injury was in a great measure personal to himself; and therefore it better became him to decline all appearance of personal resentment, and commit his cause to the righteous Arbiter of the earth; as he doth in those memorable words, wherewith he begins the xciv<sup>th</sup> *Psalms*; *O Lord God, to whom vengeance belongeth, O God, to whom vengeance belongeth, shew thyself*—that is, Let thy interposition in this cause be made evident to the world, by the righteousness of the decision. *Lift up thyself, thou Judge of the earth; render a reward to the proud.*

AND as he began, so he ended this *Psalms*, (ver. 16,) in the same way of thinking, by calling to his people, to know who would rise up, not *with him*, but *for him*, against his enemy:

will easily apprehend, that this could scarce be done without many hostile incursions and depredations; and much less were they likely to abstain, when two great hostile armies were assembled in the heart of a *Jewish* tribe.

*Who*



*Who will rise up for me against the evil-doers? Who will stand up for me against the workers of iniquity?* For here I apprehend the *Psalm* ended, at its first publication. The rest was apparently added, after the ensuing battle. For, when *Joab* took the field, he found himself, I know not how, entrapped and embarrassed in the midst of two great armies; the *Ammonites* before him, drawn up under the wall of the city; and the *Syrians* behind him, extended upon the plains of *Medeba*. Military men will best judge, whether this was not the effect of some oversight, or misconduct, in that captain. However, *Joab* was blessed with that distinguishing talent of a great captain, a presence and readiness of mind upon all exigencies: he immediately divided his army into two bodies, one of which he led himself against the *Syrians*, and the other he sent against the *Ammonites*, under the command of his brother *Abishai*; assuring him at the same time, that if he were overpowered by the *Ammonites*, he would send him immediately aid; and commanding *Abishai* to do the same by him, if he found him overpowered by the *Syrians*: concluding with that noblest of all martial speeches, (2 *Sam.* x. 12.) *Be of good courage, and let us play the men for our people, and for the cities of our God: and the Lord do that which seemeth him good* \*.

THE *Syrians*, it seems, were the better soldiers; and one reason of their being so, might

\* We may learn from hence how naturally great dangers inspire sentiments of true religion.



be, that they had of late, as appears from the course of this history, been more exercised in arms; and therefore *Joab* led the choice of the *Israelite* army against them, and began the attack; which was well judged upon many accounts: first, because it was a proof both to his own army, and the enemy, that he was not intimidated; which was of vast consequence in his present situation. 2<sup>dly</sup>, Because they were mercenaries, who never think themselves under the same engagements to make an obstinate resistance, as they do that fight for their country \*. And, 3<sup>dly</sup>, Because if they were once routed, who were the better soldiers, the *Ammonites*, intimidated by their defeat, would become an easier conquest to his brother.

THE event answered; the *Syrians* were put to flight; and when the *Ammonites* saw them turn their backs, the text tells us, *they fled also, and entered into the city*.—And *Joab*, not being in a condition either to pursue the chariots, (for he had no horse) or to assault or besiege the city, returned to *Jerusalem*; but (it is to be presumed) not till he saw the country freed from the *Syrian* army.

AND now it was, as I apprehend, that *David*, reflecting upon the danger his army had escaped, and partly, perhaps, thro' his own fault, in declining to lead them out in person, added seven more verses to the xciv<sup>th</sup> *Psalms*; the first of which begins with acknowledging the danger,

\* *Ut quibus temere collectis, neque in victoria decus esset, neque in fuga flagitium.* Tacit. 2 Hist.

and ascribing the deliverance to GOD — *Unless the Lord had been my help, my soul had almost dwelt in silence, &c.* And not content with this, *David*, again revolving the greatness of the deliverance, (which, perhaps is not to be paralleled in history) composed, or at least sung a second time, another hymn of thanksgiving to GOD, upon this occasion, *Psalms cxxiv* \*: which is evidently the thanksgiving of a man whose people were thought a sure prey to their enemies; and yet escaped by the providential interposition of GOD in their favour. Which was evidently the condition of the *Israelites*, when they were pent in between two great hostile armies; from whence there was no possibility of escaping, but by breaking through them by main force: a condition, and a deliverance, which could never be represented by an apter image, than that which *David* makes use of in the close of this Psalm; a bird caught in a snare, who had no chance for his life, but by breaking it: *Our soul is escaped even as a bird out of the snare of the fowlers: the snare is broken, and we are delivered.*

\* *If it had not been the Lord that was on our side, now may Israel say; if it had not been the Lord who was on our side when men rose up against us: then they had swallowed us up quick, when their wrath was kindled against us: then the waters had overwhelmed us, the stream had gone over our soul: then the proud waters had gone over our soul. — Blessed be the Lord, who hath not given us a prey to their teeth. — Our soul is escaped as a bird out of the snare of the fowlers; the snare is broken, and we are escaped.*

*Our help is in the name of the Lord, who made heaven and earth.*

## C H A P. VII.

*The Syrian War finished.—David's Felicities during this Period summed up.—This Book ends.*

WHETHER the season of the year was too far advanced to keep the field any longer, or whatever other reason made *Joab* return to *Jerusalem*, with the *Israelite* army; the *Syrians*, who knew how far they had injured and provoked *David*, had good reason to expect they would visit them again, upon the return of the spring: and they made their preparations accordingly.

HADAREZER (for so he is now called, by an easy change of the *Hebrew* letters *d* and *r*, [דד] whose similitude is obvious to every eye) assembled his forces; and not finding them of strength sufficient to be confided in, the text tells us, he *sent and brought out the Syrians that were beyond the river Euphrates; and they came to Helam*, under the conduct of *Shobach*, captain of *Hadar-ezer's* host. Which when *David* learnt, and was sufficiently informed concerning them, he gathered the choice troops of his whole realm together, and led them out in person against the enemy; passed the *Jordan*, and arrived at *Helam*, where they found the *Syrians* prepared to receive them; and drawn up in battle-array. A battle ensued, and with that, a carnage the greatest

greatest of any recorded in *David's* wars. *The Syrians*, saith the sacred writer, *fled before Israel, and David slew the men of seven hundred chariots of the Syrians, and forty thousand horsemen* (2 *Sam.* x. 18.); a relation, which we find a good deal diversified in the first book of *Chronicles*, the xix<sup>th</sup> chapter, and the 18<sup>th</sup> verse; where it is said in the *English* version, (which I think very justifiable from the original) that he *slew seven thousand men which fought in chariots, and forty thousand footmen*. Now critics are of opinion, that these seven thousand men which fought in chariots, are the men of seven hundred chariots mentioned in the second book of *Sam.* ten to a chariot; which I think could not be, because then the fashion of their military chariots must have been intirely changed in the compass of one year.

THERE is more to be \* said for the article of *footmen*; because the *Chronicles* being a supplement to the books of *Samuel* and the *Kings*, and in the second book of *Samuel* the historian having made no mention of any footmen slain in this battle, this addition might be made here, to supply that defect. But however that may be, they both agree, that *David* slew *Shobach*, captain of the hostile host, with his own hands (for his death is personally ascribed to *David* in both †); which the *Romans* made account of,

\* The number of chariots brought into the field the preceding campaign (thirty thousand) on supposition that the text is there rightly translated, must satisfy every reasonable man, that there could not be more than two men in a chariot.

† One says, he smote him; and the other says, he slew him.



as the highest point of military glory; and such as no more than three of their heroes had ever attained, from the foundation of the commonwealth. Nor was the renown arising from such a conquest without a foundation of true military glory, in those ages, where personal prowess, and great bodily strength, were always essential ingredients in the character of a great commander; whose personal bravery was the sheet-anchor, and only resource of his troops, when hard pushed by their enemy, or otherwise reduced to distress of any kind. For, in that case, to vanquish the captain, by dint of superior valour, and dexterity in arms, was, in effect, to dismay and to defeat his forces.

WHERE this city of *Helam*, mentioned in the text, was situated, none of the critics have been able to inform us. But inasmuch as this is evidently the last battle fought by *Hadad* against *David*, (as *Nicolaus Damascenus* witnesses) upon the banks of the *Euphrates*; there can, I think, be but little doubt that *Helam* was built upon the banks of that river; which probably was one cause of the great slaughter made of the enemy in this battle, inasmuch as, having the *Israelites* before, and the *Euphrates* behind them, they found less room for flight.

THE gaining of this battle, under these advantageous circumstances effectually finished the *Syrian* war; and established *David's* dominion on that side, to the utmost extent of God's promise to *Abraham*: *From the river of Egypt, to the great river, the river Euphrates.* For the  
sacred

sacred historians inform us, That *when all the kings that were servants to Hadarezer, saw that they were smitten before Israel, they made peace with Israel, and served them: so the Syrians feared to help the children of Ammon any more.*

AND now was *David*, as I conceive, advanced to the highest pitch of earthly glory, fortune, and felicity!

AND here, perhaps the reader may not think it amiss to rest a while; and revolve the several gradations, and signal felicities, by which he arrived to this eminence.

AND first, it is remarkable, that the natural foundation of all this grandeur was laid in the very beginning of a civil war, of five years continuance; which, in all appearance, was wasteful, and would be ruinous, both to him and his people. But whilst his enemies, for that reason, left him unmolested, he employ'd that whole time, partly in gaining over the tribes to him, and partly in training up all those who sided with him, to arms; his own tribe first, and all the rest gradually as they joined him: and all this, under a specious and unsuspected colour of keeping up a proper force against *Ish-bosheth* his rival. And as his army at no time exceeded the number of twenty-four thousand men, so small a number created no suspicion, nor gave any jealousy to his neighbours; who never reflected, that these troops were changed every month; and an equal number of new men brought into military discipline: or, if they observed, that it was so, after some time, pos-

sibly, this gave them still less suspicion; as apprehending that there was less to be feared from a body of raw, undisciplined men; little considering, that by this monthly and regular rotation, every man in his dominions must in a little time be trained up to arms; and, in the course of a few circulations, thoroughly disciplined: as in fact it came to pass. For we find him, in little more than eight or nine years, able to withstand the united force of all his neighbour nations, invading him at once; which perhaps never was the case of any other prince, from the foundation of the world.

It is true, other princes, *Alexander* the Great, (for example) and *Charles* the XIIth of *Sweden*, have been combined against, and invaded by some of their neighbours, in the beginning, and, as they deemed it, infancy of their reigns; but I cannot recollect, that ever I heard or read of any general combination, unanimously entered into, against any prince of any nation, and yet totally defeated, except *David*. For what other prince, from the foundation of the world, could cry out with him.—*All nations compassed me about, but in the Name of the Lord I have destroyed them?*

It is obvious to observe, that the advantages derived to *David* from this combination thus defeated, were very great. For, as all these princes, by thus manifesting their hostile intentions against him, gave him, by the law of nature, an unlimited right of exercising hostilities against them, he saw himself at full liberty to  
invade

invade each of them apart, as he found it most convenient, and accordingly did so; till he gradually added all their dominions to his own; and stretched his kingdom to the bounds originally assign'd to it by Almighty GOD: and in so doing, signally, and beyond all possibility of evasion, fulfilled the most remarkable prophecies, that ever were delivered from the foundation of the world.

AND as these wars were often interrupted, it is remarkable, that *David* filled all his intervals of peace with the best arts of peace, and with the noblest offices and purposes of religion and virtue; establishing true piety, distributing justice, and fulfilling the sacred engagements of friendship. He built a magnificent city; strengthened it with walls, and with a citadel of uncommon magnificence; adorned it with palaces; and crowned it with the tabernacle of GOD: completed the public worship of GOD, in all its parts, with a spirit of piety, that never was equalled; and in an order, and with an attendance, worthy of it.

LET me add that when *David* seemed weary of war, and his mind was wholly employ'd in the noblest offices of peace; when he would gladly have stopped short, and left much of the work assigned him by Almighty GOD, undone; — a new war was forced upon him, in consequence of one of the kindest and most generous acts of friendship; which ended in extending his dominions to the utmost limits assigned to them  
(on



(on that side) by the great Ruler and Arbiter of the universe.

THIS period comprehends a space of about twenty years: during which time, *David* waged eight \* several wars; and finished seven of them: all righteously begun, and successfully ended. And, which is more extraordinary, he fought no battle, during that whole period, which he did not win; and assaulted no city, which he did not take.

IN a civil war, of five years continuance, he never once lifted up his sword against a subject; and at the end of it, he punished no rebel, he remembered no offence, he revenged no injury, but the murder of his rival.

WHEN he had subdued his enemies, and established his throne, he remembered his friendship to *Jonathan*; restored *Mephibosheth* to his estate; took him to his bosom, and treated him as his own son; and did every thing in his power, to perpetuate to his posterity, the friendship he owed his father.

To crown all—with all these rare and true felicities, their only sure source and security, his religion and his innocence still remained with him: and, had his innocence still remain'd, his felicities had still continued.

\* First, The civil war with *Ishbosheth*. Secondly, The *Jebusite* war. Thirdly, The confederate *Philistine* war. Fourthly, the separate *Philistine* war. Fifthly, The war with *Moab*. Sixthly, The first war with *Hadadexer*. Seventhly, The war with *Edm*. Eightly, The confederate war with *Ammon* and the *Syrians*.

AND here I end this book; not glad, nor studious to begin another; which must open a new scene, very different from all the past, and such as, I own, I cannot think of, without united horror and affliction.

---

---

---

A N

Historical ACCOUNT

Of the LIFE and REIGN of

King *D A V I D.*

---

BOOK IV.

---

CHAP. I.

DAVID, *beholding Bathsheba batheing herself, falls under the Temptation; and hath criminal Commerce with her: Uriah's Death the inevitable Consequence of this Commerce.*

**I**N the close of the last book, we left *David* in the height of honour and happiness; his country flourishing, his armies successful, and his enemies at his feet. But the heights of fortune and felicity are not here the securest and the steadiest stations: tempests and temptations encompass them; which suffer nothing

thing serene and permanent, in this frail, unstable state.

THE season of warfare returned; the *Ammonites* were the enemies; and indignities, personal to *David*, were to be vindicated; decency and dignity more naturally referred them to the chastisement of others. *Joab* therefore, and all *Israel* with him, were sent into the field, and *David* continued at home.

JOAB, altho' he came off victorious in the last expedition, had however been reduced to great streights; seemingly from some defect in his own conduct. And therefore *David* seems to have been now more than ordinarily careful, to send him out well attended: inasmuch as he sent out not only all the flower of the *Israelite* forces, but likewise his own life-guard (his worthies as I apprehend included) along with him\*. And the effects were answerable: for the text tells us, that *they destroyed the children of Ammon; and besieged Rabbah, (their capital) but David tarried still at Jerusalem.*

AND it came to pass, that whilst he was there, rising one evening from his afternoon's rest, and walking upon the roof of his house, to enjoy the refreshment of the evening air, the usual relief of warmer climates; he happened unfortunately to cast his eye upon a most beautiful woman, who was bathing herself for health and refreshment, in that cool and seasonable

\* So I think we are well warranted to understand those words, 2 Sam. xi. 1, *David sent Joab, and his servants with him, and all Israel.*



hour; but whether in her garden, or courtyard, overlooked by the palace, or in some apartment of her house, whose windows opened that way, is not certain. Tradition points out the place of a fountain, still called after her name: which should make it probable, that she bathed in a garden, did not *Josephus* expressly declare, that it was in her own house. And indeed the natural modesty and decency of the sex, and circumstance of the time, (the evening) make his account much more credible. And it is certain, that the declining rays of the sun, shooting into the inmost recesses of her chamber, at that time of the day, and throwing a great lustre around her, might discover her very clearly, to very distant eyes, without the least suspicion on her part, of any possibility of her being seen; and, of consequence, consistently with all the reserve of modesty. However, this only is undoubted; that *David*, struck with her person and beauty, which, supposing it under the conduct of the most guarded modesty, might yet, in the action of bathing, be, to him, a sight new, extraordinary, and surprising, (and such perhaps, as few modest men have ever beheld but by accident) suffered himself to be too much transported with it, and fell at once under the temptation. For, inquiring in the instant, and learning who she was, he sent, and had her brought into his apartment: where he had criminal commerce with her; and soon after suffered her to return to her house.

ALL this was a sudden, and, as it should seem from *Nathan's* parable, a secret transaction.

I SHALL not take upon me to account for this quick impetuous passion (the starts of passion are perhaps the strangest phenomena in our frame); and much less will I presume either to excuse or insult it: one thing only we know, that whatever in any degree impairs the power of reason, adds so much to the power of passion; and possibly that numbness of reason, that stupidity which never fails to attend an afternoon's sleep, upon a full meal, might have been one ingredient, or some way or other an addition to the extravagance of this; at least, the humane reader will pardon me the weakness of wishing to alleviate it.

THE woman was *Bathsheba*, the wife of *Uriah*, one of the king's worthies, and then with *Joab* in the field. And it was easy for the king to send for her, under the pretext of conveying some dispatches to her husband, thro' her hands.

WHAT the state of *David's* mind was, when the tumult of passion was laid, *Bathsheba* departed, and reason returned, I shall not take upon me to paint. The calm reflections of a spirit truly religious will best imagine the horrors of so complicated a guilt, upon the recoil of conscience; when all those passions, whose blandishments, but a few moments before, deluded, seduced, and overset his reason, now  
rejoined

resumed their full deformity, or rushed into their contrary extremes; desire, into distraction; the sweets of pleasure, into bitterness of soul; love, into self-detestation; and hope, almost into the horrors of despair! The wife of one of his own worthies, apparently an innocent and a valuable woman, abused and tainted, and brought to the very brink of ruin and infamy! A brave man basely dishonoured! and a faithful subject irreparably injured! The laws of God trampled under foot—of that God, who had so eminently distinguished, exalted, and honoured him! Well might he cry out in the anguish of this distracted condition; *Fearfulness and trembling are come upon me, and horror hath overwhelmed me.* In one word, his condition was now so dreadful, that it was not easy for him to bring himself to the presumption of even petitioning for mercy! And this I take to be the true reason, why we find no Psalm of *David's* penned upon this occasion. Not that he continued any time, and much less a long time, (as some have weakly imagined) in a state of impenitence: that is the stupidity, not of an initiating sinner, but a scared conscience.

BESIDES, had that been his case, the intercourse had been continued, and the guilt repeated, which there is not the least colour of reason to believe, or even suspect. Quite the contrary: I am satisfied, nothing succeeded this first act of guilt, but sincere repentance, the rack of conscience, and a religious habit of abstinence

nence from the repetition of it. The indulgence in guilt was an impetuous, unruly act of passion: the abstinence from repeating it, a calm continued habit of religion.

HOLY and blessed abstinence! sure test of virtue, and proof of penitence! Could any merit in mortals atone for guilt, in the sight of God, I own, I should seek no other satisfaction for this, than the sacrifice of such an abstinence. But, alas! mortal guilt is not so expiated; nor its dreadful consequences to be evaded, or escaped!

BATHSHEBA was with child; the proof of her adultery incontestable; and the punishment due to it, inevitable, otherwise than from the cover of a subsequent commerce with her husband. Accordingly *Uriah* is sent for, and *Joab* secretly directed to dispatch him to the king, as from himself; probably, as a fit person to inform his majesty of the condition of the army; and to receive his further commands in relation to the siege. And it is certain, that if *Uriah* were *Joab's* armour-bearer, as *Josephus* assures us he was, a fitter person could not have been chosen.

WHEN he arrived, the king received him kindly; inquired *how Joab and the people with him did, and how the war prosper'd*: and when he had examined him as he thought fit, directed him to go home, and refresh himself, after the fatigue of his journey; and when he was departed from the palace, ordered (as a singular mark of his favour) that a mess of meat from the king's



table should follow him to his house. It followed accordingly, but found him not there. For the text tells us, *Uriah slept at the door of the king's house, with all the servants of his lord, and went not down to his house.*

WHEN *David* heard, that *Uriah* had not gone home to his house, but stayed all night in the palace with those of his fellow-soldiers, who then kept the ward of the king's house, he sent for him the next morning, and rebuked him in a kind manner, for not having taken proper care of himself after the toil of his journey. *Uriah*, in return, gave the king to understand, that ease and indulgence would ill become him, in the present situation of his majesty's affairs, and hard service of his troops—The answer, in the original, is truly heroic:—*And Uriah said unto David, The ark, and Israel, and Judah, abide in tents; and my lord Joab, and the servants of my lord, are encamped in the open fields. Shall I then go into mine house, to eat and to drink, and to lie with my wife? As thou livest, and as thy soul liveth, I will not do this thing.*

THE reader, I believe, can have no doubt, that this disappointment threw the king into great perplexity: he was evidently at a loss what to do, or how to conduct himself: and in that doubt, commanded *Uriah* to continue at *Jerusalem* one day more: *Tarry here*, said the king, *to-day also, and to-morrow I will let thee depart.* Accordingly, we learn from the text, that he abode there that day, and the next also. *David* was doubtless still at a loss what to do; and probably

bably not without hopes, that *Uriah's* being so long in the same city, with so amiable a woman as *Bathsheba*, might soften the severity of his resolution, and induce him to make her a visit — But in vain: *Uriah* was determined, and inflexible.

DAVID had but one thing left to gain his point: and that was, to try what effect wine and good cheer might have upon the soldier's spirit. Men of that profession do not think themselves bound (out of their seasons of discipline) to be strictly upon their guard, against such occasional refreshments, and reliefs of toil; which sometimes make the wisest men forget their severest resolutions, and might naturally be hoped to have the same effect upon *Uriah*; especially with regard to a resolution against nature, and too strictly severe.

DAVID tried the experiment; but to no purpose. We are given to understand from the text, that he made *Uriah* drink to some excess, enough to disturb his reason, but not to shake his resolution: for when he left the palace in the evening, he again resorted to the king's guard, and passed his night with them: *but went not down to his house.*

WHAT horrors seized the soul of *David*, upon hearing this news, the next morning, is much easier to be imagined, than expressed. He had injured a brave man: to undo, or to repair the evil, was impossible; all that he could hope, was, to hide the injury, and not to aggravate by exposing it. He had done all in his power, to

effect that; but to no purpose—If the infamy were exposed, it were in all appearance impossible to protect *Bathsheba*: it is not clear, that he could protect himself. An affair of that consequence would doubtless be brought before the supreme council of the Seventy, established by *Moses* \*: from its nature, the most solemn and powerful assembly, that ever sat in judgment in any state! made up of the princes and rulers of every tribe; among whom, a man of *Uriah's* alliance † and consequence must have many friends; altho' justice should otherwise fail to have its due weight.

THE *Talmudists* extend the jurisdiction of this council, even over kings. I know they are generally disbelieved in this point; but I sincerely own, I know not for what reason, especially

\* Some people infer, from the silence of the Scriptures, that the *Sanhedrim* had ceased under their kings: but they forget how absurd it is to suppose, that a council so solemnly instituted by God, and in the continuance of which every tribe was so nearly interested, should ever cease, tho' perhaps its power might, at certain periods, have been considerably lessened, and possibly was so now.

Besides, there is, I think, a plain proof of its subsisting, deducible from *chap. viii. of Ezekiel*, where we find seventy antients of the people with *Paazaniah* the son of *Shaphan* (a famous scribe in the days of *Josiah*) in the midst of them, offering incense to idols: who could these seventy antients be, but the *Sanhedrim*?

What their power was in the days of *David*, we cannot say; but what it was after the captivity, will best be learned from *Josephus's Antiq. lib. xiv. cap. 17.* where we find them calling *Herod* before them, for putting a notorious robber to death, without their sentence; when he was *tetrarch of Galilee*, and his father *procurator of Judæa*. And it was as much as king *Hyrchanus* could do, to save his life.

† He was married to the daughter of *Ammiel* the son of *Achitophel*.

when it appears from *chap. xxxviii. ver. 5. of Jeremiah*, that the princes had a power which the king could not controul.

NAY, altho' it should be imagined, that the *Sanhedrim* did not then subsist, I think there is some reason to believe, that the very priesthood could bring both *David* and *Bathsheba* to public justice upon this occasion. This we know, that they were able to put the law of leprosy in execution upon *Uzziah*, one of the greatest princes of his descent, in the very height and pride of his glory (2 *Chron. xxvi. 20, 21.*); for, altho' he had then an army of four hundred thousand valiant men under his command, they thrust him out of the temple, and shut him up in a *several-house*, to the day of his death.

THIS then I take to be, beyond all doubt, the truth of *David's* case. He had committed one great crime; and he was under a kind of necessity \* of protecting that, by committing a greater. He could not bear to see the innocent woman he had injured, brought to public infamy; and he could not screen her from it, but by the death of her innocent husband. And thus adultery begat murder. *Uriah* was sent for the next morning, and charged with dispatches to the general, which contained his own death-warrant †.

\* In the general the rule of duty is obvious. A man should die, rather than commit sin; nor will I presume to say, there is any exception to this rule: yet I cannot pronounce it impossible, that one sin may draw men into dilemmas of greater.

† Some have imagined, that *Uriah* forbore going to his own house, from a suspicion of the king's commerce with his wife. Had this been the case, he had certainly examined the dispatches sent by him to *Joab*.



IT is melancholy to observe, that whilst we are tossed upon the waves of this world, the boisterous waves of passion and appetite, the very best men are but too much in the condition of *St. Peter* in the sea; they walk one step upright, and sink the next. And, sinking one step, if the hand of mercy be not reached out to rescue them, they must sink deeper. *David* but this moment sadly repented of one great guilt, and is now upon the verge of perpetrating a greater.

THE reader will, I believe, be better satisfied, to take the account of this matter from the sacred historian's own words, 2 *Sam.* xi. 14, 15, 16, and 17 *verses*. I can throw no light upon the text by varying them, and GOD forbid I should wish to obscure it. He tells us, that *in the morning it came to pass, that David wrote a letter to Joab, and sent it by the hand of Uriah. And he wrote in the letter, saying, Set ye Uriah in the fore-front of the hottest battle, and retire ye from him, that he may be smitten, and die.— And it came to pass, when Joab observed the city, that he assigned Uriah unto a place where he knew that valiant men were. And the men of the city went out, and fought with Joab: and there fell some of the people of the servants of David, and Uriah the Hittite died also.*

URIAH's known bravery made it easily apprehended, that he would be foremost in danger: and of consequence, being deserted in it, he must die.

THUS fell this brave man; a sacrifice to his own heroic virtue, and his prince's guilt. He fell, but not alone; some of his brave companions

nions in arms \* stood by him to the last, nor deserted him in death.

WHEN this black and horrid deed was perpetrated, a messenger was immediately dispatched, to carry the news to *David*; altho' under colour of informing him of the state of the war in general, and the ill success of the last attack. — And the messenger was particularly instructed, that if he found the king's wrath rise to a high degree, on account of the rashness of their attempt, and too near approach to the city walls, he should then add, that *Uriah the Hittite was dead also* †.

JOAB's messenger seems to have been a man of uncommon address: who, judging it more adviseable to prevent the king's anger, than to take upon him how to appease it, when he had given his majesty a general account of the army, added a relation of the late unlucky skirmish, in the following manner; That, as they were carrying on their approaches to the city, the enemy sallied upon them, and repulsed them to a considerable distance: but were soon beaten back, and pursued to the gates of the city: That in the ardour of the pursuit, some of the *Israelite* forces, approaching too near the walls, suffered by the shot of those who defended them: That some of his majesty's servants were unhappily

\* *And there fell* (saith the text) *of the people of the servants of David*: by which I understand some of his worthies, the companions of *Uriah*.

† In the text it is, *Thy servant Uriah*, &c. This expression is, I think, a plain proof, that *David's* worthies were particularly distinguished by the name of *David's* servants.

slain upon that occasion, and among the rest *Uriah the Hittite*.

THE king, having all he wanted in the account of *Uriah's* death, bore the rest of his loss with sufficient patience; and directed the messenger to console his general upon this occasion, by letting him know, that this misfortune must be numbered among the common accidents of war: that the sword made no distinction between the hero and the coward; but devoured all alike: that he must make his battle stronger; and persevere in assaulting the city, till he took it. And so the matter ended.

WHOEVER reads the account of this affair in the original relation, will easily be led to make this plain observation upon it; that *David* was wont to conduct himself in his wars, by the examples of the good or ill success of the captains of his own nation, (in former ages) according to their good or ill conduct. And therefore it was, that *Joab* apprehended, he should be upbraided for suffering his men to come within the reach of the enemies arrows from the wall, with the example of *Abimelech's* fate, who fell, as *Pyrrhus* did, (and, what is pretty extraordinary, in a city of the same name) by a like instance of rashness—2 *Sam.* xi. 19, 20, 21. And therefore *Joab* charged the messenger, saying, *When thou hast made an end of telling the matters of the war unto the king, and if so be that the king's wrath arise, and he say unto thee, Wherefore approached ye so nigh unto the city, when ye did fight? Knew ye not, that they would shoot from*  
the

*the wall? Who smote Abimelech the son of Jerubesheth? Did not a Woman cast a piece of a milstone upon him from the wall, that he died in Thebez? Why went ye nigh the wall? then say thou, Thy servant Uriah the Hittite is dead also.*

As I have long been of opinion, that the *Greeks* borrowed most, if not all their mythology from the sacred history, the scheme of this work will, I hope, bear me out, in adding, that the fable of *Bellerophon* is, I think, founded upon the story of *Uriah*.

BELLEROPHON, who, as some scholiasts think, should be read *Boulepheron* (a counsel-carrier) was a stranger at the court of *Prætus*, as *Uriah* (being an *Hittite*) was at the court of *David*. He declined the embraces of *Sthenobæa*, as *Uriah* did the bed of *Bathsheba*; and was for that reason sent to *Jobates*, general of *Prætus's* army, with letters, which contained a direction to put him to death; as *Uriah* was sent to *Joab*, *David's* general: and was sent by *Jobates*, with a small guard, upon an attack, in which it was intended he should be slain; as *Uriah* was by *Joab*, to that in which he fell. The main of the history is the same in both: and the variations such, as might naturally be expected in fabulous imbellishments. Hence it is that the mythologist, not being tied to truth, thought himself bound, in point of poetic justice, to deliver the virtue of *Bellerophon* from the evil intended him: and so his history ends happily in this world; as, I doubt not, *Uriah's* does in the next.



## C H A P. II.

DAVID *takes Bathsheba to his House, and makes her his Wife. GOD sends Nathan the Prophet to rebuke him, and denounce the divine Vengeance upon his Guilt.*

WHEN *Bathsheba* heard, that *Uriah* her husband was dead, she mourned for him, according to the custom of her country : which is generally supposed to be, by the keeping of a fast for seven days successively ; eating nothing each day, till the sun was set. And, when her mourning was over, *David* sent and took her to his house ; and she became his wife, and bare him a son, the issue of his criminal commerce with her.

It cannot be denied, that there was a manifest indecency in *David's* taking *Bathsheba* to be his wife, so soon after her husband's death. And some think her compliance a proof of her indifference and disregard for her husband.

THIS conduct will, however, bear this excuse, that they were anxious to hide the infamy of their commerce ; and, to effect that, no time was to be lost. If *Bathsheba* miscarried, their guilt was concealed ; at least, could not be proved. And, if she came to her full time, it was easy to pretend she came before it ; at least so far as to screen her from any criminal process : which could

could not be done, had the marriage been delayed. And, in this case, *Bathsheba* may be pardoned the sacrificing not only decency, but even a real esteem and affection for her husband, to the necessary care of her own fame and life. Presumptions indeed lay against them; and, in all appearance, this whole affair could now be no longer a real secret. It passed through too many hands; and is but too probable, that *David's*, *Bathsheba's*, and *Joab's* messengers, were, in effect, privy to it. And the birth of a child begotten in the time of *Uriah's* absence, the notoriety of that absence, and his subsequent abstinence from *Bathsheba's* bed, strongly published both the guilt, and the infamy, to the thinking part of the world, however it might be disguised to others. *David* was too knowing, not to be sufficiently conscious of all this; and too honourable, and too conscientious, not to feel the inherent and subsequent stings of guilt, and infamy, deep at his heart. But what should he do? Could he publish his own shame? Could he proclaim his own infamy? Private penitence was all that was in his power; and that could make no reparation for the public scandal, which he had brought upon the religion and people of GOD; which yet would be more public, and much more notorious, if he himself proclaimed it: and, after all, possibly the secret was yet but in a few hands.

IN this rack of conscience, and distraction of distress, the Providence of GOD seasonably and mercifully interposed: and the LORD sent *Nathan*

*than* the prophet to *David*, to admonish him of his guilt, and to bring him to a public confession of it. And indeed a fitter person could not, in all human appearance, have been chosen for such a commission. He waited upon the king, with the air of a complainant,, who brought a case of great commiseration before his majesty, and submitted it to his arbitration. He told him, in the words of the sacred writer, (for no other can do him justice) That *there were two men in one city; the one rich, and the other poor. The rich man had exceeding many flocks and herds: but the poor man had nothing save one little ewe-lamb, which he had bought, and nourished up: and it grew up together with him, and with his children; it did eat of his own meat, and drank of his own cup, and lay in his own bosom, and was unto him as a daughter. And there came a traveller unto the rich man, and he spared to take of his own flock, and of his own herd, to dress for the way-faring man, that was come unto him; but took the poor man's lamb, and dressed it for the man that was come to him.*

*And David's anger was greatly kindled against the man, and he said to Nathan, As the Lord liveth, the man that hath done this thing, shall surely die. And he shall restore the lamb fourfold, because he did this thing, and because he had no pity.*

*And Nathan said to David, Thou art the man.*

It is easy to imagine, how deep these words of *Nathan*, pronounced in all the dignity and

- autho-

authority of his character, sunk into *David's* soul! especially when the prophet proceeded to a farther explication of them, in the following manner, *ver. 7.* *Thus saith the Lord God of Israel* — *I anointed thee king of Israel, and delivered thee out of the hand of Saul: and I gave thee thy master's wives into thy bosom, and gave thee the house of Israel, and of Judah; and, if that had been to little, I would moreover have given unto thee such and such things. Wherefore hast thou despised the commandment of the Lord, to do evil in his sight? Thou hast killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword, and hast taken his wife to be thy wife, and hast slain him with the sword of the children of Ammon. Now therefore the sword shall never depart from thine house. Because thou hast despised me, and hast taken the wife of Uriah to be thy wife, thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will raise up evil against thee out of thine own house, and I will take thy wives before thine eyes, and give them unto thy neighbour, and he shall lie with thy wives in the sight of this sun: for thou didst it secretly; but I will do this thing before all Israel, and before the sun\*.*

\* Here is a long train of temporal calamities and chastisements to be inflicted upon *David*, on the score of his guilt; but the candid reader will please to observe, that they are all to be inflicted upon him in this world: that there is not the least hint of any part of his punishment's being deferred to the next: even *mortal* guilt (the eternal vengeance due to it being remitted) had all its remaining punishment in this world: and shall what some call *venial* guilt be chastised in the next? The inference is obvious: *Nathan* knew nothing of purgatory! or, if he did, he slipt the fairest occasion of revealing it to the world, that ever offered itself.



HERE he paused — And *David*, overwhelmed with shame, stung with remorse, and oppressed with a dreadful sense of the divine vengeance, impending, and ready to fall down upon himself, and his family, could only give utterance to this short sentence—*I have sinned against the Lord*—To which *Nathan* immediately subjoined—*The Lord also hath put away thy sin\**; *thou shalt not die. Howbeit, because by this deed thou hast given great occasion to the enemies of the Lord to blaspheme, the child also†, that is born unto thee, shall surely die.*

THERE is something unspeakably gracious in this sudden sentence of pardon pronounced by the prophet, in the instant of *David's* confession of guilt, and humiliation before GOD. But I think we may fairly infer from it, that this pardon was not purchased by that instantaneous submission; but that in truth it was now only declared, but purchased at the price of a long preceding penitence. Nor is it otherwise to be accounted for, consistently with GOD's innate abhorrence of guilt, and established extraordinary methods of reconciliation and forgiveness: which they would do well seriously to revolve, who imagine that *David* was in a state of impenitence, from the day of his first commerce with *Bathsheba*, till this instant. A supposition (in

\* That is, the mortal guilt, and eternal punishment; together with the temporal punishment of death due to that offence by the *Mosaic* law.

† The chastisement of this guilt shall be seen also in the child who was the offspring of it.

my apprehension) as injurious to *David*, as it is dangerous to true religion.

THAT he had in fact sorrowed for these sins, confessed to Almighty GOD, and earnestly implored forgiveness, before the pardon pronounced by *Nathan*, is to me evident from *Psalms* xxxii. in which, now reinstated in the favour of GOD, and happy beyond expression upon that account, he most beautifully and feelingly describes the distressed condition he was in, before that pardon was pronounced; his body distempered, and wasted with grief, and his mind upon the rack.

*When I kept silence \*, my bones waxed old, thro' my roaring, all the day long. For day and night thy hand was heavy upon me—I acknowledged my sin unto thee; and mine iniquity have I not hid: I said I will confess my transgressions unto thee Lord. And thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah—* And what was the consequence?—His moisture was turned into the dryness † of summer—The change was, as if he had been removed at once from the depth of winter, into midsummer; as if all the storms, and rains, and clouds, of that gloomy season (the finest emblems of grief) were changed, at once, into serenity and sun-

\* Some have inferred from these words that *David* continued some time impenitent; but, for my own part, I can only infer from them, that he was for some time under such a sense of guilt, as would not let him presume to pray; and such a silence is the best proof of true compunction of conscience. Had he been long impenitent, it were impossible for him to say; *Mine iniquity have I not hid.*

† So the word should be translated.

shine; all heaven clear, unclouded, and smiling upon him.

THE same thing is also evident, as I apprehend, from *Psalms* cxxx. plainly written in the spirit of a penitent, who trusted in the infinite mercy of GOD, and hoped for forgiveness, but had not yet obtained it \*.

BUT to proceed — —

DAVID, being now fully satisfied that his guilt was too well known to the world, and that GOD would pursue it with public vengeance, found it high time to do every thing that in him lay, to wipe off the reproach he had brought upon his holy religion, and make all possible reparation for the offence he had given to GOD and man; and (I doubt not) rejoiced in the occasion of taking public shame to himself, for such complicated and aggravated guilt; and making a public confession of it before the whole world. — And, to this purpose, he then composed and published the fifty-first *Psalms*, directing it To the chief musician; and, without doubt, commanding it to be publicly sung in the tabernacle, in the presence of all his people; himself attending, and prostrate before the throne of mercy.

\* 3 *If thou, Lord, wilt be extreme to mark what is done amiss: O Lord, who may abide it?*

4. *For there is mercy with thee therefore shalt thou be feared.*

5. *I look for the Lord: my soul doth wait for him: in his word is my trust.*

6. *My soul fleeth unto the Lord; before the morning watch, I say, before the morning-watch.*

7. *O Israel, trust in the Lord; for with the Lord there is mercy: and with him is plenteous redemption.*

8. *And he shall redeem Israel from all his sins.*

It is surely matter of uncommon curiosity to contemplate upon *David*, in this condition. Behold the greatest monarch of the earth, thus humbled for his sins before GOD! confessing his shame, with contrition, and confusion of face! calling out for mercy, and imploring pardon, in the presence of his meanest subjects! There is something in such an image of penitence, more fitted to strike the soul with a dread and abhorrence of guilt, than it is possible to express: something more edifying, more adapted to the human infirmities, and more powerful to reform them, than the most perfect example of unsinning obedience; especially, if the supplications and petitions he pours out to GOD, be thoroughly suited to the solemnity of the occasion, and condition of the penitent; as they undoubtedly are in this fifty-first *Psalms*. Here the penitent humbly and earnestly begs for mercy—He acknowledges his sin, and his innate depravity, the source of it—He begs to be renewed in the grace of GOD—and in that health which the horror of his wickedness had impaired—Above all, he earnestly beseeches GOD, not to cast him off, nor deliver him up to a reprobate sense:—*Cast me not away from thy presence, and take not thy Holy Spirit from me—O give me the comfort of thy help again—deliver me from blood-guiltiness, O God, thou God of my salvation—*In one word, the soul of shame, of sorrow, of remorse, of sincere repentance, and bitter anguish under the agonies of guilt, breathes strong and fervent, through every line of this hallowed



composition. And it is (I doubt not) *David's* greatest consolation at this moment, when he blesses GOD for the providential effects of his fall, that those crimes, which wrought his shame, and sorrow, and infamy, have, in the humility, the piety, the contrition of confessing them, (in this and several other *Psalms* composed upon the same occasion) rescued, and reformed, millions.

GIVE me leave to add, that there were two circumstances of distress, which attended upon *David's* fall; and have not (as I apprehend) been sufficiently considered by any of the commentators: and yet, they are, beyond all question, the greatest, and the severest, that human nature can suffer.

THE first is; The distress he endured, on account of the obloquy and reproach brought upon the true religion, and the truly religious, by his guilt: and the second; The reproach, and endless insults, brought upon himself, even by his repentance, and humiliation before GOD and the world.

BOTH these are fully set forth in the sixty-ninth *Psalms*.

VER. 3. *I am weary of my crying, my throat is dried: mine eyes fail, while I wait for my God.*

5. *O God! thou knowest my foolishness; and my sins are not hid from thee.*

6. *Let not them that wait on thee, O Lord God of hosts, be ashamed for my sake: let not those that seek thee, be confounded for my sake, O God of Israel!*

7. Be-

7. *Because for thy sake I have borne reproach; shame hath covered my face.*

8. *I am become a stranger unto my brethren; and an alien unto my mother's children.*

9. *For the zeal of thine house hath eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me.*

10. *When I wept, and chastened my soul with fasting, that was turned to my reproach.*

11. *I made sack-cloth also my garment: and I became a proverb unto them.*

12. *They that sit in the gate, speak against me; and I was the song of the drunkards.*

13. *But as for me, my prayer is unto thee, O Lord, in an acceptable time: O God, in the multitude of thy mercy hear me, in the truth of thy salvation.*

14. *Deliver me out of the mire, and let me not sink: let me be delivered from them that hate me, and out of the deep waters.*

15. *Let not the water-flood overflow me, neither let the deep swallow me up, and let not the pit shut her mouth upon me.*

16. *Hear me, O Lord; for thy loving kindness is good: turn unto me according to the multitude of thy tender mercies.*

17. *And hide not thy face from thy servant; for I am in trouble: hear me speedily.*

18. *Draw nigh unto my soul, and redeem it: deliver me because of mine enemies.*

19. *Thou hast known my reproach, and my shame, and my dishonour: mine adversaries are all before me.*

20. *Reproach hath broken my heart, and I am full of heaviness. And I looked for some to take pity, but there was none; and for comforters, but I found none.*

LET any ingenuous man who feels for virtue, and is not scared to shame, put the question to himself: I appeal to his own heart, whether he would not infinitely rather die than endure the state now described; in one day forsaken by his friends, scorned by his enemies, insulted by his inferiors; the scoff of libertines, and the song of sots! What then must we think of the fortitude and magnanimity of that man, who could endure all this, for a series of years? Or rather how shall we adore that unfailing mercy, and all-sufficient goodness, which could support him thus, under the quickest sense of shame and infamy, and deepest compunctions of conscience; which could enable him to bear up steadily against guilt, infamy, and the evil world united; from a principle of true religion! And in the end, even rejoice in his sad estate; as he plainly perceived, it must finally tend to promote the true interest of virtue, and glory of God; that is, must finally tend to promote that interest which was the great governing principle, and main purpose, of his life!

## CH A P. IV.

*Some Account of Nathan the Prophet.  
 The Child born of Bathsheba sickens.  
 David fasts, and humbles himself before  
 God in his behalf; but to no purpose.  
 The Child dies. David's remarkable  
 Resignation to the Will of God. So-  
 lomon is born and blessed.*

**T**HAT very curious and exquisite parable of *Nathan's*, recounted in the last chapter, which placed *David's* guilt in so clear a light, and at the same time so hid it from himself, as to extort his own sentence of condemnation, from his own mouth; at once so well concealed the criminal, and inflamed the crime, as to irritate the king's resentment beyond all the bounds of justice\*. The author of so masterly a parable naturally awakens the reader's curiosity, to learn something of so extraordinary a person. But before I proceed to that head, it will be proper to observe to the reader, that there is one difficulty in *Nathan's* charge against *David*, which none of the commentators have cleared. It is this: It seems to be

\* By the law of God, the sheep-thief should, at most, but restore four-fold, *Exod. xxii. 1.* *If a man shall steal an ox, or a sheep, and kill it, or sell it; he shall restore five oxen for an ox, and four sheep for a sheep.*



made a part of *David's* accusation, That he married *Bathsheba*—*Thou hast killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword, AND HAST TAKEN HIS WIFE TO BE THY WIFE.* Now, I own, I can see no guilt in this, other than that of multiplying wives, which the kings of *Israel* were expressly forbidden to do, *Deut. xvii. 17.* inasmuch as no law of *GOD*, or nature, prohibit such a marriage, any otherwise than as they prohibit polygamy. Unless the prophet means, that he murdered *Uriah*, in order to make *Bathsheba* his wife; which must be owned to be a very crying guilt.

THERE is therefore, I presume, no room for any other censure upon this part of *David's* conduct. He had injured (as I apprehend) an innocent, and a very valuable woman: and the only reparation in his power, and proof of his esteem, was, to make her his wife. But, alas! this reparation to her, was none, either to *Uriah* or his family, or the righteous Arbiter of the earth; or the reproach brought upon the true religion, by this infamous behaviour, in a prince who was the great example, teacher, and guardian of it.

BUT to return to *Nathan*:

WE learn little more of this great man, in the sacred writings, than that he was *David's* prophet, intimate counsellor, and historiographer: and the knowledge of him in this last character, must raise the reader's esteem of his modesty to the highest degree: inasmuch as he hath been very careful not to make himself his

theme; nor so much as to mention his own name, where it could be avoided with justice to his history. *Josephus* says of him, that he was *a polite and prudent man*: one who knew how to temper the severity of wisdom with sweetness of manners. And *Grotius* compares him to *Manius Lepidus*; of whom *Tacitus* says, That he found him to be a grave and wise man, in those times; who had a talent of turning away the emperor's mind from those cruel purposes, to which the vile flattery of others inclined him; and was, at the same time, in equal favour and authority with *Tiberius*.

HE next finds some resemblance in him, to *Piso*, the *Roman* high-priest under *Tiberius*; of whom the same *Tacitus* says, That he was not author of any servile sentence; and could upon occasion moderate with wisdom. But it must be owned, that the negative part of this last character is very far from doing justice to the genius of *Nathan*; who sufficiently appears, in the sacred writings, to be rather an inspirer of noble purposes, than a mere non-adviser of such as were base and servile — Witness his strong encouragement to *David*, to put his noble design of building the temple of GOD, into immediate execution. And it were but justice to add, That he could do more, than moderate wisely; for it is evident, that he knew also how to reprove princes with authority, and yet without offence; which must be allowed to require very uncommon talents, with a dexterity of address perhaps yet rarer. And this *Nathan*

H 4
did,

did, without being impaired in any degree, either of favour or affection, with *David*: quite otherwise; he seems to have increased in both, his whole life long. But it must be owned, that his known character of being inspired by God, bore him out in this conduct beyond the lot of other mortals, and so justly endeared him to *David*, that tradition tells us, he named one son after him, and committed another to his tuition. And it must be owned, that *Solomon*, in all probability, could not have been placed under a better preceptor, nor one whose instructions would better intitle him to that blessed appellation of *Jedidjah*, or the beloved of God.

WHOEVER considers the predictions of divine vengeance now denounced against *David*, on the score of his guilt, in the matter of *Uriah*, must surely find them to be in their nature very extraordinary—His family to continue beyond any other regal race in the known world; and yet the sword to continue a long—never to depart from it!

A KING—the greatest of his time! his dominion thoroughly established, and his enemies under his feet; highly honoured and beloved at home, and as highly awful to all the neighbouring nations!—Such a king threatened to have his wives publicly prostituted before the face of all his people! And, what is yet much stranger, more shocking, and more incredible, by one of his own race! and as a sure proof of this, the darling offspring of his guilt to perish quickly, before his eyes! He alone, who fills  
futu-

futurity, could foresee this; he only, who sways the world, and knows what evil appetites and dispositions, unrestrained, will attempt and perpetrate, could pronounce it: and to put it beyond all doubt, that he did foresee it, he immediately smote the child which *Bathsheba* bare to *David*, with a mortal disease.

DAVID had, upon his humiliation and repentance, just experienced one signal mercy from God: he could not tell how far the continuance of those holy offices might prevail yet further, upon a Being of infinite benignity. It is true, the denunciation of vengeance was positive; but many such denunciations in scripture, seemingly positive, are yet really conditional. Or, supposing it positive, like the sentence of death upon *Adam*, yet might it not be immediate; but respited, as his was. At worst, he could neither err nor offend, in that extreme. And for these reasons it was, as he himself gives us to understand that *David* (as the text tells us) *besought God for the child; and David fasted, and went in, and lay all night upon the earth.*

*And the elders of his house arose, and went to him, to raise him up from the earth: but he would not, neither did he eat bread with them.*

THUS he continued fasting, mourning, and imploring God, for seven days successively. *And it came to pass* (says the sacred historian, 2 Sam. xii. 18.) *on the seventh day that the child died: and the servants of David feared to tell him, that the child was dead: for they said, Behold,*



hold, while the child was yet alive, we spake unto him, and he would not hearken unto our voice: How will he then vex himself, if we tell him, that the child is dead! But when David saw, that his servants whispered, David perceived, that the child was dead: therefore David said unto his servants, Is the child dead? And they said, He is dead. Then David (with a resignation, and a resolution, never to be enough admired and imitated) arose from the earth, and washed and anointed himself, and changed his apparel, and came into the house of the Lord, and worshipped: then he came unto his own house; and when he required, they sat bread before him, and he did eat.

Then said his servants unto him, What thing is this that thou hast done? Thou didst fast and weep for the child, while it was alive; but when the child was dead, thou didst rise, and eat bread.

To this question David made the most truly heroic, philosophic, and religious answer, recorded in history: And he said, While the child was yet alive, I fasted, and wept: for I said, Who can tell, whether God will be gracious to me, that the child may live? But now he is dead, wherefore should I fast? Can I bring him back again? I shall go to him, but he shall not return to me. This, I will venture to say, is the noblest lesson upon all that is reasonable and religious in grief, that ever was penned.

I CANNOT but observe upon this occasion, that the thinking reader must find it very surprising, to see so wise a man as David, fasting and

and mourning in so extraordinary a manner, for a child, who, being yet an infant, could not possibly have been endeared to him by any of those blandishments, which so strongly engage the parental affections to their offspring; and who, as he was a dreadful monument of guilt, one would imagine, should be, to so good a man, more an object of detestation than desire; and must moreover, if he lived, be a perpetual brand of infamy upon his parents.

THE true way of accounting for it is, by ascribing it, as *Le Clerc* does, to *David's* excess of passion for *Bathsheba*; which so strongly attached him to every offspring of hers, and made him forget every thing in this child, but that motive of indearment. Besides this, there is something in human nature, which prompts us to rate things after a manner seemingly unaccountable; and to estimate them, not according to their real worth, but according to the expence, or trouble, or even the distress they have cost us. However, all this availed nothing at present: dear as this child had cost *David*, he now was deprived of him.

THUS was the first instance of the divine vengeance upon *David's* guilt, speedily and rigidly executed: other instances of it were fulfilled in their order, before his own eyes; as will abundantly appear in the sequel of this history; and the dreadfulest of all the rest, *The sword shall never depart from thine house*, sadly and successively fulfilled in his posterity; from the death  
of

of *Ammon*, by the order of his own brother, to the slaughter of the sons of *Zedekiah*, before his own eyes, by the king of *Babylon*.

GIVE me leave to add, (and let the reader make his own inferences) that *David's* guilt was more signally and dreadfully punished in his own person, and in his posterity, than any guilt I ever heard, or read of, in any other person, since *Adam*\*.

THE *Jews* are of opinion, that his own decree, of repaying the robbery fourfold, was strictly executed upon him. And as he was professedly punished by the death of one of his sons for the murder of *Uriah*, they imagine, that the other three also, who died violent deaths, fell so many sacrifices to the divine justice, upon the same account.

WHEN *David* had sufficiently humbled himself, under this first chastisement of God upon him for his sins; and supported himself under the loss of his child, by the prospect of finding him one day again in a better world; his next care was, to comfort *Bathsheba* the best he could, under their common calamity; and as she appears to have been a meek and reasonable woman,

\* The deflowering of *Tamar* by her own brother; the death of four sons, three of them before his own eyes, and one by the hand of his own brother; the unnatural rebellion of one son, which brought him almost to the brink of ruin; the prostitution of ten wives in the sight of all his subjects; and the successive and signal massacre of his posterity; besides the distress of his own public shame and infamy, added to, at least, one cruel disease.

his task (we may well presume) was so much the easier. She also, without doubt, resigned and submitted, and her resignation was rewarded accordingly; for she soon after conceived by *David*, and bare him a son; and *David*, as he was now in peace with God, and foresaw in the spirit of prophecy, that this son would be a pacific prince, he called his name *Solomon*, or *Peaceable*.

AND as this son was conceived in innocence, in the happy season of God's reconcilement to his parents, and their establishment in true religion, by sincere repentance and humiliation before him; it pleased God to accept him, in a singular manner: which is signified to us in the text, by that remarkable expression, *And the Lord loved him*. And to manifest his favour to him, for the consolation of *David*, he conveyed his benediction to the son, by the same hand which had before conveyed his chastisements to the father: he sent *Nathan* to *David* to bestow upon his son, in his name, the most blessed of all earthly, the most blessed, but one, of all heavenly appellations, *Jedidjah*, or, *The beloved of God*.



## C H A P. IV.

*The Foolishness of wicked Policy. David, upon Joab's Exhortation, goes to the Siege of Rabbah, and takes it. Deposes Hanun: and puts the remaining Ammonites to Death. His Conduct in this Point justified.*

WHILST things stood thus with *David* at *Jerusalem*, the siege of *Rabbah* still continued, being now far lengthened out into a second year. *David* had hitherto gone on with uninterrupted success, till his sins arrested his prosperity, and stopp'd him short. The truth is, all wickedness, besides those curses and judgments it draws down from heaven, hath a natural tendency to defeat the wisest schemes, and check the progress of the best purposes; as in the case before us: the *Israelites* were to make an attack, to fly, and to be defeated, that *Uriah* might fall: Could any thing more naturally raise the courage of *Ammon*, or depress that of *Israel*, than such a project? Doubtless, there were many men in the army, accustomed to be led out to battle by *Uriah*, and those brave companions of his who fell with him; and brought back with victory, and glory: Would these men be easily brought to follow other, inferior, or untried leaders, with equal ardour? Or would those *Ammonites* have any terror upon them, to meet these leaders, who had defeated and cut off

off *Uriah*, and his brave companions? And did not all this naturally tend to deject *Israel*, and inspirit their enemies? Such is the accursed policy of guilt: selfish, and short-sighted! And such the truth and wisdom of that noble maxim in the schools, That *evil is not ordinable to good*.

THE dejected spirit of the *Israelite* army naturally tended to make their measures slower, and more cautious; and of consequence, to draw the siege into greater length. However, the lower city, otherwise called the *Royal City*, or the *City of Waters*, was at length taken: and the upper city, altho' in all probability much stronger, from the advantage of its situation, on the top of an hill, could not hold out long, when its supply of water was wholly cut off. Of this, *Joab*, in all the generosity of a brave soldier, and all the affection of a faithful subject, immediately informed his king; exhorting him, That he would come in person, and put the finishing hand to the siege: *Lest I take the city, saith he, and it be called after my name*.

THERE is a gallantry, and a magnificence in this proposal, capable of creating admiration in the meanest minds. The man that could transfer the glory of his own conquests upon his prince, needs no higher an elogy. And it is but justice to the character of *Joab*, to declare, that he is, as far as I am informed, supreme, if not unrivalled\*, in this singular instance of heroism.

DAVID

\* It is true, *Curtius* mentions a like conduct in *Craterus*, in relation to the siege of *Artacana* (lib. vi. cap. 6.); but this conduct  
of

DAVID readily complied with his general's monition; and, immediately assembling *his people*, probably those troops of his militia, then on the duty of their monthly course, he marched them to *Rabbah*.

AND here I beg leave to observe, that *David* had, from the institution of his militia, greater advantages for continuing sieges, and being successful in them than any other monarch we read of in history: inasmuch as he could send a monthly recruit of twenty-four thousand men to his army, without departing from the established order of his militia, or putting his people to any new trouble or expence; which could not but be a vast relief to the weary and wounded of the army, and raise the courage of the rest; and, at the same time, a vast discouragement to the enemy, to have so many fresh men to encounter with every month, whilst they themselves were every day in a more weary and wasting way. And these I take to have been the people which *David* took with him to *Rabbah*; and with which he now, as the text informs us, *fought against it, and took it*. For if it were not to relieve the soldiers who were on that service, there seems to have been no necessity of carrying new men thither, when the difficulty of the siege was over.

of *Craterus* was evidently the effect of fear, not generosity. He well knew that his master, *Alexander*, was the vainest and most ambitious of all mortals; and, at that time, tyrannical to an high degree: and therefore he did not dare to take the city before his arrival. *Alexander* now set up for a God; and so far aped that character, as not to give his glory to another.



THE reader will naturally observe, that this was an expedition, and a conquest, which came very seasonably to remove *David's* melancholy, to relieve his distress, to blot out the memory of his guilt in relation to *Uriah*, and to revive his glory in arms. And, if *Joab* considered it in this light, (as in all probability he did) the praise of his generosity is still more ennobled in this view.

RABBAH was a royal, a large, and a populous city; the metropolis of *Arabia felix*; watered, and, in some measure, encompassed, by the river *Jabbok*. It had its name from its grandeur, being derived from an *Hebrew* word, which signifies to increase, and grow great; and was now in the height of its glory.

POLYBIUS describes this city\*, as built upon several little eminences, on the top of an hill; it was a considerable city when *Antiochus* took it: yet it then only covered the top of the hill; whereas it now not only covered, but encompassed it. And therefore it is natural to think, that the taking of this royal city brought *David* a great accession of glory, as the text assures us it did of wealth: for we are told, that he not only took a crown of gold (adorned with precious stones) of a great value† from the king's head, but likewise, that *he brought forth the spoil of the city in great abundance.*

THE king *David* formerly deposed; and Dr. *Trapp* thinks, that the form of his deposal

\* Hist. lib. v.

† A talent.



was, by arraying him in his royal robes, (and probably placing him on his throne) with his crown upon his head, and then formally divesting him of all his ensigns of royalty, somewhat in the same manner, that the duke of *Lancaster* deposed *Richard II.* concerning whom *Dr. Trapp* adds this observation from his historian, *Never was prince so gorgeous with less glory, or more grief.*

AND it must be owned, that the text seems to countenance this opinion of *Dr. Trapp's*, in that expression ; *And he took the king's crown from off his head—and it was set on David's head.*

THE king now deposed was *Hanun*, the son of *Nahash* : and inasmuch as we find *Shobi* of *Rabbah*, another son of *Nahash*, some time after this, in friendship with *David*, and shewing him signal kindness, at a season when nothing but friendship could exact it from him ; there is all the reason in the world to believe, that *David*, upon deposing *Hanun*, made *Shobi* his viceroy at *Rabbah* ; and treated him with signal kindness upon that occasion.

WE now come to that part of *David's* conduct, seemingly the most exceptionable, after the affair of *Uriah* ; and most bitterly objected to, of all others : and that is, the tortures, which, the text gives us to understand, he inflicted on the people taken in *Rabbah* ; sawing some of them asunder, tearing others to pieces by harrows of iron, and burning others in brick-kilns. Commentators also have been, in some measure, tortured upon this point ; some interpreting the  
text,

text so as to clear *David's* character of the cruelty seemingly charged upon him, in this account; others allowing the fact, but poorly vindicating his conduct in that point; and others charging it upon the hardness of his heart, in that state of impenitence, in which they suppose him to have still continued, from his criminal commerce with *Bathsheba*.

BEFORE I presume to pass any judgment upon these opinions, give me leave to premise, that, when *David* left *Shobi* in the government of *Rabbah*, it must be presumed, that he left some, besides female subjects, under his dominion; and therefore it is no way unreasonable to suppose, that when *Joab* took the royal city, or *City of Waters*, it was surrendered to him by the bulk of the people, who submitted, and were received into mercy: inasmuch as we find not the least mention or hint of any one human creature's being either chastised, or put to death, on that occasion. May we not then naturally infer, from this silence of the sacred writers, that the king, who was taken in the upper city, retired thither upon the surrender of the royal city, with the accomplices and instruments of his tyranny; and that they only suffered the chastisements due to their guilt, from the hand of *David*?

I NOW proceed to examine the opinions of commentators upon this point.

AND first, That *David's* supposed cruelty to the *Ammonites* was the consequence of his having still continued in a state of impenitence, is

an opinion, which, I think, I have already shewn to be wholly without foundation: and altho' the other opinion, that he inflicted no capital punishment upon them, is, I think, justifiable\* from the text, and hath been shewn to be so; yet that he did chastise them with the severest kinds of death, generally understood by the text, I take to be the true opinion; not only, because the text has always been understood in that sense by all *Jewish* writers; but because I apprehend that conduct in *David* to be more agreeable to the command of God; the command of extirpating all the males of every city that resisted; and the command of retaliating, upon every offender, the evils he was guilty of.

THAT the punishments now inflicted upon *Ammon*, were *Israelite* punishments, is not pretended: that they were punishments known in some other countries of the East, (in *Persia*, and in *Damascus*) is undoubted; that the *Ammonites* were monstrously cruel, cannot be denied. The *Israelites*, it is confessed, received all people to mercy, that submitted to them. The *Ammonites* refused the submission of the people of *Jabesh Gilead* (who offered to become their ser-

\* The expression in 1 *Chron.* xx. 3. is, in our translation, *And he cut them with saws*, Now the word *them* is not in the original; and the expression might, in my apprehension, be as properly translated, *And they* (*i. e.* the people whom *David* brought out of the city) *cut with saws*, &c.—In the second book of *Sam.* xii. 31. the text is, *And put them under saws*, &c. Now subjecting men to labour, may, as I apprehend, be as properly expressed by putting them under it, as subjecting them to tribute is; and is the known idiom of the *Irish* language, and perhaps of others

vants) upon any less cruel condition than that of *thrusting out every one of their right eyes* \*. If these were the gentlest terms, on which they would receive *Israelites* into protection, what treatment might they expect, if the *Ammonites* had obtained an unconditional dominion over them? In short: this one instance (to say nothing of their brutal behaviour to *David's* ambassadors) is in the place of ten thousand proofs, to demonstrate that people very monsters of cruelty! What then can we so naturally infer from this conduct of *David's* towards them, as that he now retaliated, upon them, every instance of their own cruelty to others? Nor can we have the least doubt of this, when we consider, that this was the established practice of the people of God, towards all those of their enemies whom they conquered. Let me mention two instances; When *Samuel* hewed *Agag* to pieces before the Lord, (sacrificed him to justice) his reason was, that he retorted his own murders upon him: *As thy sword hath made women childless, so shall thy mother be childless among women.* When *Judah* and *Simeon* cut off *Adonibezek's* thumbs and great-toes, he himself acknowledged the divine justice, in that righteous retribution of his own cruelty upon himself, crying out, (*Judg. i. 7.*) *Threescore and ten kings, having their thumbs and great-toes cut off, gathered their meat under my table. As I have done, so God hath requited me.*

\* 1 Sam. xi. 1, 2. The very expression carries the idea of the greatest cruelty in it.



I AM sensible, that some short-sighted, superficial people have looked upon the *Jews* as the cruellest of all conquerors; little considering that they were raised by GOD, on purpose to be a scourge upon every vice and villainy all around them. And perhaps no imaginable method could be found out, more effectual to repress the enormities of a people every way profligate, and utterly abandoned, as the *Canaanites* then were, than to raise up a people eminently distinguished by the divine favour and protection, to whom it should be an inviolable law, and a fixed point of duty to GOD, to chastise, in every man that came into their power, every enormity which they themselves had committed; and to retort in a particular manner, their cruelties upon their own heads: for this was, in effect, little less, than if GOD himself had bared his arm, to take signal vengeance on their monstrous enormities.

Now, it is beyond all doubt, that this was the case of the *Israelites* in the midst of the abandoned world about them; and it is also beyond all doubt, from *Psalms* xxi. unquestionably written upon this occasion, that this was the very reason of *David's* conduct in the case before us: *Thine hand shall find out all thine enemies, thy right-hand shall find out those that hate thee. Thou shalt make them as a fiery oven, in the time of thine anger: the Lord shall swallow them up in his wrath, and the fire shall devour them. Their fruit shalt thou destroy from the earth, and their seed from among the children of men.* FOR THEY  
INTENDED

INTENDED EVIL AGAINST THEE: THEY IMAGINED A MISCHIEVOUS DEVICE, WHICH THEY ARE NOT ABLE TO PERFORM.—THEREFORE *shalt thou set them as a butt, &c.*

AND now what was *David's* cruelty? It was evidently this: He inflicted those evils upon the *Ammonites*, which they were wont to inflict upon others; and which they, at this very time, intended to have inflicted upon *Israel*. He punished the iniquity of their own cruel practices and purposes. He executed that most equitable law of GOD upon them. And it is certain, that this alone were a sufficient justification of his conduct, that he made them suffer the evil they meant to do\*. A law, which it were the most valuable interest of mankind, to have equitably executed, in every society under heaven! and would at once prevent more evil, and punish it in a more rational and justifiable manner, than all the penal laws that ever were devised!

To confirm this reasoning yet further, we should remember, that the *Ammonites* were early initiated into all the *Canaanite* cruelties: and therefore, when I find *David* retorting their own cruelties upon them, I dare no more censure or revile him upon this head, than his enemies dare revile the people of *Agrigentum*, for burning *Phalaris* in his own bull; or *Theseus* the hero, for stretching *Procrustes* beyond the dimensions

\* *Deut.* xix. 19. The law is here limited to the evil intentions of false witnesses, but the equity of it extends to all evil intentions whatsoever: *life must go for life, eye for eye, &c.*

of his own bed. Even heathen casuists have determined, that no law could be more just, than that which decreed the artists of cruelty to perish by their own arts. What death then could be cruelty, to a people who could thrust out the eyes of a submitting, unconquered enemy? who ripped up the women with child of *Gilead*\*? a people who could bear the butchery of human victims to *Baalpeor*? What saw, what harrow, or what brick-kiln, could be punishment enough to a people who could make their own children pass thro' the fire to *Moloch*? And therefore, whilst others, either from an affectation of more gentleness and compassion in their nature, or the influence of false and fantastic notions of mercy, consider *David* in the character of a tyrant, exercising his cruelty in his conquests, I, for my own part, consider him as *the man after God's own heart*; inflicting the righteous vengeance of heaven upon a miscreant race; executing that vengeance upon guilt (upon these enemies of God and goodness†) which *Saul* was dethroned for not executing; employed in an office, the most abhorrent from his nature, when viewed in the light of affliction to others; and pleasing only, in the light of executing the righteous sentence of God upon guilt.

So when an angel, by divine command,  
With rising tempest shakes a guilty land;

\* *Amos* i. 13.

† *Psal.* xxi. 8. *Thine hand shall find out all thine enemies; thy right-hand shall find out all those that hate thee.*



Such as, of late, o'er pale *Britannia* past,  
 Calm and serene, he drives the furious blast;  
 And, PLEAS'D th' Almighty's orders to perform,  
 Rides in the whirlwind, and directs the storm.

IF I may be indulged a conjecture, another reason (or rather, circumstance) of this particular punishment of making the *Ammonites pass thro' the brick-kiln*, I take to be this: It was well known, that the *Jews* were slaves in *Egypt*; and particularly enslaved in brick-making and clay, *Exod. i. 14.* It is natural with all people at enmity, to reproach one another with the meanness and baseness of their original. The *Ammonites* were a cruel and insolent enemy, and nothing could be more natural to such spirits, when they had got any *Jews* in their power, than to cry out, *Send the slaves to their brick-kilns*; and so torture them to death. And if so, nothing could be more natural than for the *Jews* to return them the same treatment. And very probably it was in allusion to this reproach of their enemies, and to support his people under it, that *David* tells them, *Psal. lxxviii. ver. 13. Tho' ye have lien among the pots, yet shall ye be as the wings of a dove covered with silver*—That is, tho' ye were formerly obscure and oppressed slaves, tied down to the drudgery of brick-making and pottery in *Egypt*, you shall now be as glorious, as you then were contemptible. *Tho' ye have lien among the pots, yet shall ye be as the wings of a dove covered with silver, and her feathers with yellow gold.*

AND



AND now it was, beyond all doubt, (as I humbly apprehend) that *David*, recollecting the late train of GOD's signal mercies and deliverances to him, sung out the twenty-first *Psalms* in a transport of joy and thanksgiving: *The king shall joy in thy strength, O Lord; and in thy salvation how greatly shall he rejoice! Thou hast given him his heart's desire, and hast not withholden the request of his lips. Selah. For thou preventest him with the blessings of goodness: thou settest a crown of pure gold upon his head, &c.*

---

## C H A P. V.

*Tamar is ravished, and inhumanly treated, by her own Brother. That Rape is revenged by his Death. Absalom, who slew him, flies to Geshur. Nathan's Prophecies further fulfilled.*

WHEN *David* had taken *Rabbah*, and all the other cities of *Ammon*, and punished all the unsubmitting miscreants which he found in them, as they deserved; he returned, with all his people, to *Jerusalem*; but had not been long there, before another part of *Nathan's* prophecy, *I will raise up evil against thee out of thine own house*, began to be sadly fulfilled upon him.

ABSALOM, the son of *David* by *Maacah* the daughter of *Talmai*, king of *Geshur*, had a sister by the same mother, of such singular beauty,  
that

that *Amnon*, another son of *David's* (the first-born of his family) by *Ahinoam* the *Jezreelitess*, fell deeply in love with her; and, being conscious that his passion was very criminal, he concealed it for some time, but at the expence of his health and happiness; racked by the violence of a strong desire, and the terror of indulging it. *Amnon*, saith the sacred writer, (2 Sam. xiii. 2.) *was so vexed, that he fell sick for his sister Tamar; for she was a virgin, and Amnon thought it hard for him to do any thing to her.* It is natural to think, that this passion is no-where so wasting and vexatious, as where it is unlawful. A quick sense of guilt (especially where it is enormous, as in the instance before us) strikes the soul with horror; and the impossibility of an innocent gratification loads that horror with desperation. A conflict too cruel, and too dreadful, for human bearing: Witness the two most remarkable instances of it, found in history; that of *Antiochus*, for *Stratonice* his mother-in-law; and this of *Amnon*, for *Tamar* his sister. Indeed that of *Antiochus* appears the less criminal of the two; inasmuch as he seemed determined to conceal his, to death\*; and at the same time to hasten that death, to prevent its publication, had not the sagacity of *Erasistratus*, his physician, discovered it; altho' possibly *Amnon* had done the same, had not the importunity of his false and subtle friend, *Jonadab* the son of *Shimea*, *David's* brother, drawn the secret from him. He plainly

\* *Plutarch*, in the life of *Demetrius*.

perceived, that *Amnon's* disease was some strong desire ungratified; and insinuated to him, that he, who was a king's son, might give a loose to his desires, and despise the restraints of ordinary men. How vile was this advice! and how lamentable is it, that the heirs of royalty, whose virtue is of infinitely more consequence than that of meaner men, should yet be under more temptation to taint it, from the poison of infectious flatterers! How much happier was *Antigonus* in the advice and friendship of *Menedemus* the philosopher; when, being invited to a feast, where a very beautiful courtesan was to make a part of the entertainment, and asking *Menedemus*, What he should do? he answered, *Remember thou art a king's son, and shouldst do nothing unworthy of thyself!* *Jonadab* was of a character directly contrary to that of *Menedemus*: he was of that species of courtiers mentioned by *Tacitus*\*, who can applaud all the actions of princes, whether good or evil. And *Amnon* seems not far removed from that character of *Domitian*, mentioned by the same *Tacitus*; that *he played the prince's son in whoredoms and adulteries*. And therefore it is no wonder, if *Jonadab's* detestable flattery† had its effect upon such a spirit.

AMNON opened his whole heart to him, and told him his passion for *Tamar*—*I love Tamar my brother Absalom's sister* (he was

\* Annal. lib. iii.

† More criminal even than that of the *Persians* to *Cambyfes* in the like case, tho' not altogether so monstrous as that of *Julia* to *Caracalla*.



ashamed to say his own): the subtle and supple courtier, whose conscience was his least concern, immediately furnished him with an expedient to gratify his passion. He advised him to take to his bed, and feign himself sick; and when his father should come to see him, to beg his permission, that *Tamar* his sister might attend him in his sickness, and prepare him some sustenance; which he believed he could take, if he saw it prepared by her own hands. The desires of sick people are often fantastical, and unaccountable; yet must often be indulged. The train took: *David's* paternal affection did not suffer him to be long absent from a sick son, his favourite, and his first-born; nor allow him to hesitate upon granting his petition. *Tamar* was immediately ordered to attend him, and did so accordingly; and, when she had learned what food was most agreeable to him, set herself instantly to prepare it for him, with all the housewifely skill of those simple ages; where an utter insignificancy to all the purposes of domestic life made no part even of a princess's praise. For the text tells us, that *she took flour, and kneaded it, and made cakes in his sight, and did bake the cakes*; and added another preparation of them in a pan, and then served\* them up to him; *but he refused to eat*. The insinuation was, That he was grown worse. And, to cover the deceit the better, he ordered every body to go out of his room, as if he could bear

\* In the text it is, *And she took a pan, and poured them out before him*: which makes it probable that she fried them in oil.



neither the sight, nor the noise, of company. And when they were gone, he desired his sister to bring the victuals into an inner chamber, where he might eat unmolested. She, suspecting no evil, did as he desired. And when he found himself shut up with her, and sufficiently retired from his attendants, he then threw off the disguise, discovered his wicked intentions, and quickly began to use violence with her; from which, she, struck with abhorrence of the guilt, earnestly laboured to dissuade him, as from a crime unheard of in *Israel*—Would he expose a sister to infamy?—Would he expose himself to indelible reproach?—The plea for herself is inexpressibly beautiful—*And I, whither shall I cause my shame to go!* How shall I drive it away from me, and where shall I hide it? And, finding that had no weight with him, she presses him, from the motives of his own shame and infamy: *And as for thee, thou shalt be as one of the fools in Israel*—You will, from this moment, be treated as a brute, and a fool; lost to all sense of humanity, as well as virtue; will be degraded from the honour of heir apparent to the crown, into the lowest degree of derision and reproach—

It is remarkable, that the *Greeks* called every thing that was foolish, by the name of *Venus*\*: and therefore they denominated folly, by a word derived from her name†. And it should seem

\* Τα μωρά γὰρ πάντ' Ἀφροδίτῃ τοῖς βροτοῖς.

Hecuba in Troad. Euripidis.

† Ἀφροσύνη, or rather, from the radix of it, ἀφρός.

from this passage, as if the *Hebrews* had fallen into the same way of thinking. But the truth is, they were in a wiser way of thinking; and denominated all sin, folly: which is its softest name. And possibly *Tamar* now called this guilt so, for fear of too much irritating her brother.

WHEN this would not do, she changed her tone, and tried to flatter him into forbearance. He was her father's darling, who could deny him nothing: he had only to speak to the king for her, and his request would certainly be complied with.—But he, deaf to all intreaty, as well as to reason, listened to nothing but the impetuosity of his own brutal passion; and, *being stronger than she, forced her.*

AND here the flux and reflux of passion in a brutal breast are finely painted in the text. His brutality was no sooner gratified in this instance, but it broke out in another as extraordinary. The tide of his blood was turned, and it now ran back with as much violence, as it had pressed forward before. *Then Amnon hated her exceedingly, saith the text, so that the hatred wherewith he hated her, was greater than the love wherewith he had loved her.*

COMMENTATORS are at a loss to account for this sudden and excessive hatred; and indeed there seems to be something extraordinary in it. *Tamar's* rape had an effect upon her ravisher, directly contrary to that of *Dinah's* upon hers: but their circumstances were different; hope seconded and supported *Shechem's* passion, not

in itself criminal; but despair drove *Amnon's* into its opposite extreme. This is often observed to be the case with passions too *tumultuous* and unruly: *Amnon's* mind was first agitated by lust, and then by remorse, which drove to different extremes, like the vibrations of a pendulum. The horror of his guilt struck him with a sudden detestation of *her*, whom he deemed the cause of it: he hated his sister, when he should have hated himself. God abandoned him thus to the tumult of his own intemperate mind, to make this other punishment of *David's* adultery, more flagrant; and the prophet's prediction of God's *raising up evil to him out of his own house*, more conspicuous. For *Amnon's* barbarous behaviour now precluded all possibility of concealing his guilt. The moment his brutality was indulged, he commanded his sister out of his sight: *Arise*, saith he; *be gone*—To which she answered, That this second evil treatment was worse than the first. The first had passion to plead, and might be concealed, and repented of—The second was a designed, deliberate indignity, that must draw eternal infamy after it. Therefore she had reason to add, that there was no cause for it. She had given him no cause for aggravating his first offence, by loading it with an immediate and public scandal, and indelible reproach, upon her, himself, and his house; upon the religion and people of God. But he, as deaf now to decency and humanity, as he had been before to all sense of shame and conscience, called to his servant that attended him, and bid him turn out that

*woman*



*woman from him, and bolt the door after her—*

The servant obeyed, brought her out, and bolted the door after her.

TAMAR, thus treated; not parted with as an innocent woman, cruelly injured; but thrust out as a prostitute, that had seduced to sin; is the strongest image of innocence, barbarously abused, and insufferably insulted, that history affords us. The greatest injury, loaded with the greatest indignities; contumely added to cruelty! Oppressed with sorrow and overwhelmed with shame, *she put ashes upon her head, and rent her garment of divers colours, and laid her hand on her head, and went on crying*; at once hiding her shame, and despairing to conceal it.

IN this condition she passed on to her brother *Absalom's* house, who, seeing her confusion and distress, easily apprehended the causes of it; and put the question to her, Whether her brother *Amnon* had been with her? covering the gross injury he suspected, under the veil of the most decent and distant phrase that could hint his suspicion to her. And as if all that had not been enough, to save her blushes, and let her see, that he understood her distress, he stopped her short, from attempting any answer, by begging her, That she would say nothing of the matter; but endeavour to forget the injury, since it was a brother who had done it. *But hold now thy peace, my sister; he is thy brother—regard not this thing.* But as all he could say could not remedy the evil, neither could it relieve it; which seems sufficiently implied, in what the



the sacred historian adds—*So Tamar continued disconsolate in her brother Absalom's house.* And, in all probability, she continued so her whole life long; unmarried, and undone. And *Amnon* had the horror of reflecting, that, for one moment's base and brutal indulgence, he had made his nearest kinswoman, an amiable and an innocent sister, miserable to the last moment of her life.

How *David* resented this rape, we learn from the text; which informs us, that he *was very wroth*; but how he punished it, we know not. The truth is, it was to no purpose for him to punish it legally, and hardly possible to punish it equitably; inasmuch as that could not be done without at once exposing the infamy of his house, and cutting off the next heir of his crown. And how hard was it for a father to do this? especially a father who was partly accessory to the guilt, by a very unguarded compliance with his son's irrational request. The legal punishment of a rape, upon a virgin unbetrothed, was a fine of fifty shekels of silver, to be paid to the father of the damsel, and an obligation upon the ravisher to take her to wife, without a power of divorce, *Deut. xxii. 28, 29.* The first of these penalties was insignificant in the case before us, and the second impracticable; because the marriage must be incestuous.

THIS case is also attended with another difficulty: The rape was committed in a city, and the damsel did not cry out; and in that case, I apprehend, the law of *Deut. xxii. 23, 24.* must

be executed upon her. It is true, she was not a damsel betrothed, and therefore the letter of that law does not extend to her case; but the equity of it does, because the crime committed, and *Tamar's* offence against that law, was equally great, and *Amnon's* injury equally irreparable: consequently had he been sentenced to death\*, she must have suffered with him; and therefore *David* could not punish him, as he ought, without involving her in his fate; and I apprehend it to be a rule of equity, rather to let the guilty escape, than to destroy the innocent and the injured.

BUT it may be asked, What becomes of the power of the *Sanhedrim* in that case? If that court was now in being, and *David* could protect *Amnon* from it, could he not as well have protected both himself and *Bathsheba*? Consequently, how did he lie under any necessity of destroying *Uriah*, to screen either himself, or *Bathsheba*, from an infamous punishment?

I ANSWER, That, supposing that court in being, and that *Amnon* could be punished by it as he deserved, and *Tamar* at the same time acquitted, (which could not be, unless they could take upon them to dispense with a law of GOD) yet, what court takes cognisance of causes not brought before it? And how could this cause come before it, when all the persons interested in the prosecution of it, were at least equally in-

\* As he certainly must have been by the law of *Levit. xx. 17.* for uncovering his sister's nakedness.

terested to conceal it; which was by no means the case in the affair of *Bathsheba*; whose husband was a very considerable man, (greatly provoked) and greatly allied, as will be seen hereafter. And therefore the two cases are, in my opinion, very different: great, and, as I apprehend, insuperable difficulties, obstructed the course of justice in *Amnon's* affair—

HOWEVER, that guilt, which either human justice, or human infirmity, could not chastize as it deserved, the divine vengeance did.

ABSALOM, altho' grieved to the soul, for the injury done to his sister, and resenting it to death, yet so well dissembled his resentment, as not to take the least notice of it to *Amnon*. He carefully concealed his resentment, at once to hide his intention of revenge, and to make it sure; and hid it thus, for two whole years together; at the end of which he invited his father, and all his bretheren, to the customary festivity of a sheep-sheering: which *David* declined, on account of the unnecessary expence to which it must put his son. Then *Absalom* begged, and pressed him again: *Howbeit he would not go*, saith the text; yet, to soften the refusal, he gave him his blessing. Then *Absalom* begged again, that *Amnon* (his elder brother, and heir apparent of the crown) might honour him with his presence. This too *David* declined, for some time; but, being much pressed by *Absalom*, (to whom he could not easily refuse any thing) that he and the rest of his brethren might have leave to go with him, *David* at length consented; and they went accordingly.

ABSALOM, now determined to make sure of his revenge, directed some servants, in whom he could confide, to attend *Amnon* at the feast, till the wine had raised his spirits, and taken him off his guard; and then to be ready, as soon as he gave the word, to smite and to slay him. They did as they were directed, and *Amnon* fell. — Thus did *Absalom*, at one blow, revenge himself upon his sister's ravisher, and rid himself of his rival in his father's favour, and only obstacle (as he apprehended) to his crown.

WHEN the fatal blow was given to *Amnon*, the rest of the king's sons, terrified at what they saw, started up from the table, seized every man his mule, and fled home as fast as they could. But, fast as they fled, fame reached the palace before them; and told *David*, that *Absalom* had destroyed all his sons.

THIS news, we may well imagine, threw the king into the utmost consternation: drove him seemingly even to despair. He tore his cloaths and laid himself upon the earth, as one abandoned to distress: and his servants stood disconsolate around him, with their garments torn also; till *Jonadab*, recollecting himself, in his subtilty, and running over the train of his own thoughts, easily concluded, that *Amnon* only was killed; and immediately took upon him, to assure the king, that it must be so: *Let not the king*, saith he, *suppose that they have slain all the young men, the king's sons: for Amnon only is dead: for, by the appointment of Absalom, this hath been determined, from the day that he forced his sister*



*Tamar* \*. Now, therefore, let not my lord the king take the thing to his heart, to think that all the king's sons are dead; for Amnon only is dead. Immediately the young men, who were upon the watch, gave notice that they saw a croud of people coming by the way of the hill-side. And instantly, Jonadab cried out to the king, That his sons were come—*And it came to pass, saith the text, as soon as he had made an end of speaking, that, behold, the king's sons came, and lift up their voice, and wept; and the king also, and all his servants, wept very sore. And Absalom fled, and went to Talmai the son of Ammihud, king of Geshur: and David mourned for his son every day.*

AND thus did GOD, by withdrawing his restraining grace from *Amnon*, and leaving him a prey to his own passions, *raise up evil to David out of his own house*: a daughter ravished by her own brother; that brother, murdered by another brother; and that other, in exile upon that account; and soon to perish, by a fate yet more deplorable, had it not been more deserved!

AND now began another, and more dreadful, prophecy of *Nathan's* to be fulfilled upon *David*, before his own eyes: the sword was now first brought in upon his house, attended with this dreadful assurance, of *never departing from it*.

\* What unparalleled impudence and effrontery was this, to speak with such calmness and unconcern, of an horrid villainy, which he himself had contrived, and of which he now saw the dreadful consequences! What a miscreant minister was this, and how much fitter to be admitted into the counsels of hell, than into of those *David*!

## C H A P. VI.

*Joab's Device to get Absalom recalled by means of the wise Woman of Tekoah, succeeds. Being brought back to Jerusalem, he is not admitted to the King's Presence, but remanded to his own House. What followed thereupon.*

ABSALOM's sheep sheering was at *Baal-hazor*, near *Ephraim*; about eight miles from *Jerusalem*. He fled, the moment his brother was killed: and one may well believe, his accomplices fled with him; who probably were *Geshurites*, some of his mother's friends; and so were sure of the protection of *Talmi*, for revenging the violence done to his granddaughter. And there is no doubt but they took their measures so well, that no pursuit from *Jerusalem*, had any been attempted, could overtake them. But *David*, who must be allowed to have been criminally indulgent to his children, was not of a disposition to revenge the death of one favourite son, by that of another; especially when his guilt was no more, than that of revenging an action in itself worthy of death.

THE *Vulgate* and *Septuagint* inform us, that, when *David* heard of *Amnon's* crime, he was much enraged, but would not grieve his son's spirit, because he loved him, being his eldest son. It is true, this addition is not found in

the *Hebrew* text; yet it is confessedly very ancient, and probably but too true. And if so, he could but ill punish, in *Absalom*, the chastisement of that guilt, which his own seasonable chastisement of *Amnon's* earlier enormities might have prevented. And, in that case, his resentment must recoil upon himself, and acquit *Absalom*. And possibly this may be the true reason, why we hear nothing of any measures he took to bring *Absalom* to justice, and why he mourned so much, and so long, for *Amnon*. For we learn from 2 *Sam.* xiii. 37. that he mourned long and daily for him. However, at the end of three years, his affection for *Absalom* got the better of a fruitless grief, for a loss which could not be recalled; *and he was comforted* (saith the text) *concerning Amnon, seeing he was dead.*

AND now, his concern was, to be so long robbed of the satisfaction of seeing another child, who was so dear to him: as if he had taken up *Rebekah's* complaint \*, *Why should I be deprived also of them both in one day?*

IN this condition he pined and languished for his son: *And the soul of king David*, saith the text, *longed to go forth unto Absalom*; as if his soul would have rejoiced even to have quitted his body, to go out and meet him.

JOAB quickly perceived the king's condition; and thought he should pay his court to advantage, if he could contrive to deceive and surprise him into a resolution of recalling his son

\* *Gen.* xxvii, 45,

from exile. To this purpose, he instructed a woman of good sense, and great address, (from *Tekoah*, a distant city of *Judah*) who waited upon the king, in the air and habit of a disconsolate widow, in mourning, and deep distress, on account of her son, whom his own family were pursuing to death, for having slain his brother, in an accidental contention, in the field—The moment she appeared before the king, she fell upon her face, and implored his aid; *Help, O king!*—She then told him her case, and added all the alleviating and distressful circumstances, that could move the king's compassion: The brothers were alone in the field, and none to part them; possibly he might slay his brother, either undesignedly, or in his own defence. He was her only child, the only hope and stay of her family; and, if they cut him off\*, they would leave her husband neither *name, nor remainder, upon the earth.*

THE king soon felt her distress: the case was too like his own, to suffer him to be unmoved. He told her, she might return to her house, and leave the care of her business to him; he would give proper directions about it. But she, not having yet what she wanted, took occasion, from her seeming solicitude for her son, to continue the conversation.—She added,

\* The expression in the original is singularly beautiful and expressive: *And so they shall quench my coal that is left.* And Heathen authors seem to have copied it from hence, So those few men who survived the deluge are called by *Plato* and *Lucian* (ὄνυγα, *live coals*, who were to rekindle the vital flame, and continue the human race.



That if she had pressed his majesty to any thing in itself unjust, or any way misinformed him, or misrepresented the state of the case, she wished all the guilt of that iniquity or misrepresentation might fall upon her own head, and upon her family: *My lord, O king! the iniquity be on me, and on my father's house: and the king and his throne be guiltless.* The king then bid her, if any body molested her any more, to bring them before him, and he would take care to stop any further proceedings against her. She then begged, that in making that promise, to stay the avenger of blood from causing any further destruction in her family, he would remember the LORD his GOD: that is, remember he made that promise in the presence of GOD; drawing him thus, distantly, and insensibly, into the obligation of an oath. Her address had its effect: and the king, to convince her of the integrity of his intentions, immediately answered, *As the Lord liveth, there shall not one hair of thy son fall to the earth.*

HAVING gained this point, she then begged leave to say one word. And, having obtained permission, she immediately proceeded to expostulate with the king, upon his own conduct, and unkindness to the people of GOD, in not pardoning his own son, and bringing him back from exile. His mercy to her son, made him self-condemned in relation to his own; whose killing his brother was, in many respects, more excusable. She then added a very natural and seasonable reflection—That death was the  
common

common lot of all men; some by one means, and some by another: That, in that state, *we are like water spilt upon the ground, which cannot be gathered*: That God, if he pleased, could strike the offender dead; but inasmuch as he did not, it was, because he would leave room for mercy: That he had devised means in his own law, to arrest the avenger of blood; and, in his appointed time, to recal the man-slayer from his exile, in the city of refuge\*.

BUT here, apprehending she might have gone too far, and made too free with majesty, in expostulating so plainly upon a point of such importance, she excused this presumption, from the force put upon her by her people; who had so severely threatened her, that, in this extremity, she plainly saw she had no resource, or hope of relief, but in laying her son's case before the king: which she, confiding in his majesty's mercy, and assuring herself, that he would hear her with his wonted patience and clemency, at length adventured to do; hoping that it might be a means of saving both herself, and her son, from being destroyed out of the inheritance of God; insinuating, that her own life was wrapt up in his.

THE king, observing the uncommon art and dexterity of her address, in the management of this affair, immediately began to suspect, that it was a thing concerted between her and *Joab*. And previously charging her not to hide it from

\* Where he was to continue to the death of the high-priest, *Numb.* xxxv. 25.

him, he put the question directly to her; *Is not theb and of Joab with thee in all this? And the woman, not daring to disguise the matter any further, answered, and said, as thy soul liveth, my lord the king, none can turn to the right-hand, or to the left, from aught that my lord the king hath spoken: for thy servant Joab he bad me, and he put all these words in the mouth of thy hand-maid: to fetch about this form of speech, hath thy servant Joab done this thing: and my lord is wise, according to the wisdom of an angel of God, to know all things that are in the earth.*

THEN the king, turning to Joab, (who was all this while in the presence) ordered him to go for his son, and bring him home. *And the king said unto Joab, Behold, now I have done this thing: go therefore, bring the young man Absalom again.*

I AM sensible, that the *Jews* are generally considered as an illiterate, barbarous people; and the charge is so far just, that they despised the learning of other nations: but this by no means infers them either ignorant or barbarous. I own they appear to me in a very different light: and although I shall not now insist, that the *Bible* is the fountain-head of all true politeness, and what is properly called good-breeding among mankind, (as I am well satisfied it is) yet I will venture to declare, that the single design and address of this device, now recounted, are sufficient proofs (if there were no other) to evince this people neither unpolite, nor uninformed.

BUR

BUT to proceed —

WHEN *David* consented to recal *Absalom*, and appointed *Joab* to conduct him home, *Joab* bowed himself down to the earth; and thanked him, as for the greatest obligation his majesty could confer upon him: *To-day thy servant knoweth, that I have found grace in thy sight, my lord, O king, in that the king hath fulfilled the request of his servant*; placing that obligation intirely to his own score, which, he knew, was the greatest he could lay upon his master. A refinement of flattery, and address, not easily equalled!

WHEN this was done, *Joab*, saith the text, *arose, and went to Geshur, and brought Absalom to Jerusalem*; well pleased, we may be assured, to be at once the messenger of his prince's mercy to the heir apparent of his crown, and the instrument of their reconciliation: which could not fail to secure him a present fund of favour with the father; and an equal fund, in reversion, with the son. But however, altho' the king so far forgave *Absalom*, as to recal him from exile; yet, when he returned, he ordered him to be taken directly to his own house; and forbade him to see his face. And *Absalom* continued thus for two whole years in *Jerusalem*, without being once admitted into his father's presence. A discountenance, and a rebuke, at least, little enough, to signify the king's abhorrence of his late cruel revenge upon his brother; and, in all appearance, not more than was necessary, to mortify his pride, and repress his popularity; which now, in all probability, began



gan to blaze out, upon the news of his reconciliation to his father. And this I apprehend to be the reason, why the sacred historian subjoins to this account of the king's discountenance, a particular description of *Abfalom's* beauty; which is a natural and common foundation of popularity: and then adds an account of his having three sons, and one fair daughter, (whom he named after his unhappy sister *Tamar*) which was also another fountain of pride, popularity, and presumption.

HIS beauty is thus celebrated; That, in all *Israel*, there was none to be so much praised, upon that score: and that it was without alloy, or abatement, from any imperfection: that *from the sole of his foot, to the crown of his head, there was no blemish in him*. There is no particular mentioned, besides his hair: and the beauty of that is only implied in its quantity; which was indeed prodigious! weighing, upon the lowest computation, at least three pounds: which might be easily estimated, by weighing what was cut off, in his annual polling, (for we are told he polled it annually on account of its excessive weight) and examining, what proportion that bore, to what remained. And although a good deal of this may be accounted for, both from the usage of long hair, and the great quantity of oyl, then in use, which added both to the growth and weight; yet it is evident from the text, that there must have been something in it, accounted very singular, even at that time.

ABSALOM had, it must be owned, a very singular excellence of form; but with that, nothing truly estimable, that we know of. His character seems nearly allied to that of *Aurelia Orestilla*, mentioned by *Sallust*, who had nothing praiseworthy about her, besides her beauty.

THIS vain young man, weary with being so long detained in that confinement and obscurity, so mortifying to his pride, and so unfriendly to his popularity, sent a messenger to *Joab*, to desire to speak with him; in order to prevail upon him, to solicit his intercession with the king, to be admitted to his presence. And, on his not coming upon the first message, he sent a second. And when he found no better success from his second message, he ordered his servants to set a field of barley, which *Joab* had contiguous to his own, on fire; and they did accordingly: which *Joab* resenting, went immediately to expostulate with him, upon the injury done him.—*Absalom* answered, That, finding the messages he had sent him, ineffectual, he took that method to bring him to him; and gain an opportunity of sending him to the king, to intercede for permission to be admitted to his presence. For if that could not be obtained, To what purpose was it for him to return from *Geshur*? He might as well have continued there in exile still. In short, he insisted with *Joab*, that he must see the king, at any rate: *Now therefore*, saith he, *let me see the king's face; and if there be any iniquity in me, let him kill me.* His impetuosity prevailed: *Joab*  
was

was once more sent to intercede with the king for him: his intercession succeeded, and *Absalom* was admitted to the royal presence, where he did obeisance, humbling himself before the king, with his face to the ground. And the king was reconciled, and kissed him.

THE reader, little versed in courts, is apt to be surpris'd, (as at first sight I own I was) to see *Joab* so zealous to get *Absalom* recalled from exile, and to observe him afterwards so cold and indifferent, to have him re-establish'd in his father's favour.

THE truth is, when *Joab* had greatly gratified the king, and gained credit with him, by bringing back *Absalom* to *Jerusalem*, he had little reason, as a minister, to be solicitous to bring him about the king's person, and restore him to full favour; because, in that case, he might naturally apprehend, that *Absalom's* interest with his father might impair his own. This the young man's ambition could but ill endure; and therefore he took this extraordinary step, to be set right with his father. A step, which shewed him determin'd to go any lengths, rather than fall short of his ambitious aims. He that could set his friend's field on fire, barely to be admitted to court, would little scruple to set his country in a flame, (if I may be allowed the expression) to be rais'd to a crown: altho', possibly, this injury to *Joab* might have been, in some measure, an artifice, to prevent the king's suspicion of their combination, and *Joab's* too great attachment to the interest of his son.

As to *Absalom's* resolution of being brought to the king, even at the hazard of his life; it seems to be much less the effect of fortitude, than presumption upon his father's fondness, *Amnon's* most heinous injury to *Tamar*, being irreparable, well deserved death. And *Absalom* well knew, his father would not be extreme, for punishing it, as it deserved, out of form. The provocation was too grievous, not to excuse great irregularity in revenging it; especially not to excuse it, in a son, so exceedingly beloved. And therefore *Absalom* might safely offer himself as a victim to his father's vengeance, secure not to be sacrificed to it.

## C H A P. VII.

DAVID falls sick about this time. *A Digression, shewing, that his Distemper was, probably, the Small-pox.*

THAT *David*, at some part of his life, was afflicted with a grievous distemper, which he considered as the chastisement of God upon him for his sins, seems sufficiently evident from many passages in his *Psalms*, particularly xxxviii \*. xxxix. xl. and xli †. That this calamity fell upon

\* O Lord, rebuke me not in thy wrath, neither chasten me in thy hot displeasure.

Ver. 2. For thine arrows stick fast in me, and thy hand presseth me sore.

† Ver. 4. I said, Lord, be merciful to me: heal my soul; for I have sinned against thee.



him about the time that a dangerous and rebellious conspiracy was formed against him, appears from the same *Psalms*. And forasmuch as we hear of no more than one conspiracy of that kind formed against him, it follows, that his sickness fell upon him about this time. And that his distemper was that which is now known to us, under the name of the *small-pox*, is (as I conceive) very probable, from the same *Psalms*.

PSAL. xxxviii. 3. *There is no soundness in my flesh, &c.*

5. *My wounds stink, and are corrupt.*

7. *My loins are filled with a sore disease* (He was afflicted with violent pains in his back, or perhaps the weight of the distemper fell upon those parts): *and there is no soundness in my flesh.*

8. *I am feeble and sore broken.*

10. *As for the light of mine eyes, it also is gone from me.*

11. *My lovers and friends stand aloof from my sore, and my kinsmen stand afar off.*

PSAL. xxxix. 11. *When thou with rebukes dost correct man for iniquity, thou makest his beauty to consume away, like a moth, fretting a garment.*

Now, I apprehend, that there is no other distemper, in which all these characters, universal foreness, and unsoundness of the flesh, corruption, stench, temporary blindness, (for such *David's* was) and loss of beauty, are at once united, except the *small pox*: particularly that loss of beauty which is caused by reducing the skin into the condition of a garment fretted by moths. And surely, never was distemper characterized

by a clearer or more beautiful allusion and image, than this.

THIS will also be confirmed, by considering that this was *Job's* distemper; and that *David* found himself in the same condition with *Job*.

THAT this was *Job's* distemper, (supposing it of the number of those known to us) is apparently clear, from that single character of it; that he was *smitten with boils, from the sole of his foot unto his crown*\*. The same thing is also apparently clear, from another passage, *Job* xix. 20. *I am escaped with the skin of my teeth*. His disease had stripped off all the rest of his skin, even that on the inside of his mouth; which sufficiently confirms it to have been the *small-pox*.

IN this distemper *Job* complains†, that GOD had made him to be forsaken of his companions and friends; that he compassed him with his archers; tore his reins, and blinded his eyes—*My skin is broken, and become loathsome§; he, (that is, man) as a rotten thing, consumeth, as a garment that is moth-eaten. Thou hast made desolate all my company‡. My friends scorn me||. His archers compass me round about. He cleaveth my reins asunder—My reins be consumed within me: he breaketh me with breach upon breach. On my eye-lids is the shadow of death\*\**. There are

\* *Job* ii. 7.

† *Ibid.* xvi. 7, &c.

§ *Ibid.* vii. 5.

‡ *Ibid.* xvi. 7.

|| *Ibid.* ver. 20.

\*\* Now, besides the poetic beauty of this expression, there is also a propriety in it, every way expressive of his condition in the *small-pox*; which deserves carefully to be attended to. The blindness was not from any defect or distemper in his eyes, but from the closing of his eye-lids,

other circumstances (besides these last mentioned) to prove this to have been *Job's* distemper; but as my purpose in recounting these, was only to shew, that *David's* distemper was the same with his, I therefore recounted those only in which they both agreed.

Now the reader will find every one of these complaints from the mouth of *David*, in the passages now quoted, and referred to: and therefore I think it clear, that his disease was the same with *Job's*; that is, that it was (probably) the *small-pox*; consequently not that distemper which the libertine world would insinuate.

THE same thing appears also, as I apprehend, from some of those *Psalms* which *David* wrote upon his recovery\*. Thus, in *Psalms* ciii. he blesses God, *who healed all his diseases*, that his *youth was renewed like the eagle's*. Now it is generally understood of the eagle, that when his feathers molt, and fall off gradually, and new ones succeed, his youth is renewed with his plumage†. Which carries no unapt or unnatural

\* These, as I apprehend, are four in all: *Psalms*, xxx. ciii. cxvi. and cxlvi.

† Now I am well assured, that these feathers fall by pairs, one in each wing; and that those which fall at once, are the two feathers exactly corresponding to each other, in each wing; and that this pair is renewed by a new growth, before the next pair falls. A plain appointment of providential wisdom and goodness! for by thus preserving the exact balance of the wings, which a very little inequality (the difference of less than half a feather) in either would destroy, the eagle is never utterly disabled from pursuing his prey; tho' it be evident he cannot pursue it with full vigour, till all his feathers be renewed; and therefore his youth is then said to be restored.



allusion to a man, whose old skin, rough and scaled with the *small-pox*, falls off piecemeal, and is succeeded by another, smooth and youthful: altho' I am inclined to believe from the text, that it may also carry another allusion.

COMMENTATORS, in their comments upon this text, quote St. *Augustin*, and St. *Epiphanius*, as asserting, that when the eagle grows old, and that crooked, incruited substance of his bill increases to such a degree, that he cannot eat, he strikes his bill against a rock, till he beats off his excess of beak, and is again in a condition to take food; by which his strength is renewed, and with that, apparently, his youth. Now (if I am rightly informed) it is no uncommon case, in the *small-pox*, for men to have their mouths so incruited with it, that they are utterly incapable of taking any food, or any sustenance, but from liquids; and that with great difficulty: but, when that incrustation falls off, they are then in a condition to take proper nourishment; by which their strength is restored. And if that was *David's* case, then is the beauty and propriety of the allusion in the text, sufficiently evident: For then might he truly say of his God, *who satisfied thy mouth with good things, so that thy youth is renewed like the eagle's.*

THAT *David's* distemper was the *small-pox*, is, I think, again confirmed from another *Psalms*; written also in thanksgiving for his recovery: I mean the cxlvi<sup>th</sup>.

LET it then be previously observed, that a man, confined to his bed by sickness, may very



properly be considered as a prisoner; and, consequently his recovery may be considered as a restoration to freedom. Now suppose a man recovered from the *small-pox*, in which he was blind and hungry, under an incapacity of eating, for some time; in what words could that man more naturally celebrate the goodness of God to him, than in those of *David*, in this *Psalms*? Ver. 1. *Praise the Lord, O my soul.* Ver. 2. *While I live, will I praise the Lord, &c.* Ver. 7. *Which executeth judgment for the oppressed, which giveth food to the hungry: the Lord looseth the prisoners.* Ver. 8. *The Lord openeth the eyes of the blind: the Lord raiseth them that are bowed down.*

THE reader will please to observe, that the expression of *opening the eyes of the blind*\*, very naturally points out the condition of a man recovered from the *small-pox*; whose blindness arose, like *Job's*, not from any defect or distemper in his eyes; but from their being shut up, by the closing of his eye-lids†.

THE same thing is, I think, yet further confirmed, from the accounts which *David* himself hath left us, of the conspiracy formed against him in his sickness, in the thirty-eighth and forty-first *Psalms*. Now I will venture to say, that there is no sickness incident to man, in which a con-

\* This single circumstance sufficiently evinces *David's* distemper not to have been that other infection, whose blindness is not temporary.

† I know the expression is used in the gospel, in relation to our Saviour's miraculous cure of blindness: but there is no reason to believe, that any such cure was wrought in the days of *David*.

spiracy could be more naturally encouraged, and yet, at the same time, so effectually discovered to the person concerned, as the *small-pox*, of the confluent kind, in which the patient is often observed to lie, for some days, seemingly speechless, and utterly insensible; and yet, in reality, is sometimes sensible and intelligent.

I HAVE often heard a man of known veracity (yet living) affirm, that he very well remembers himself in that very condition, under that evil disease, in which he frequently heard himself pronounced speechless, insensible, and past all hopes of recovery; under this very singular and happy circumstance, that he had a thorough contempt of the ignorance and stupidity of all who pronounced him in that state.

Now *David* says of himself, in his distemper, *Psal. xli. ver. 5. Mine enemies speak evil of me: When shall he die, and his name perish?*

6. *And if he come to see me, he speaketh vanity: and his heart conceiveth falshood within himself; and when he cometh forth, he telleth it.*

7. *All mine enemies whisper together against me: even against me do they imagine this evil.*

8. *An evil disease, say they, cleaveth fast unto him; and now that he lieth, he shall rise up no more\*.*

HERE we see, they whispered, and pronounced the sentence of death upon him; ima-

\* Some have imagined, that *David's* distemper was the *leprosy*; but they forget, that, in that case, he must have been deposed, as *Uzziah* the greatest of his successors was, and shut up in a *several-house*, where he remained for many years, to the day of his death.

gining, that he neither observed nor heard them; though in reality he did both. But the same thing is yet more clearly and incontestably set forth in *Psalms* xxxviii. ver. 12.

*They also that sought after my life, laid snares for me: and they that went about to do me evil, talked of wickedness, and imagined deceit, all the day long.*

13. *As for me, I was like a deaf man, and heard not; and as one that is dumb, who doth not open his mouth.*

14. *I became even as a man that heareth not, and in whose mouth are no reproofs.*

FROM all these symptoms and circumstances now recounted, all which unite and combine in the *small-pox*, and in no other distemper, that we know of, I think we may fairly conclude, that this was the evil distemper under which *David* laboured, when a dangerous domestic conspiracy was formed against him\*. What  
that

\* I am well aware of a strong objection, that lies against this account; *viz.* That the *small-pox* was not known in the world till about eleven hundred years ago. I answer, That neither was the other infection, charged upon him, known in the world till much later; and therefore, if this objection be strong against the *small-pox*, it is much stronger against the other.

I shall only add, That the history of this distemper, in the accounts left us of *Job* and *David*, might have been a very proper trial of faith, in those ages, where no such distemper was known; as it is now a just confirmation of our faith, and a rational ground for believing the truth of these histories, which relate events, now ordinary and indisputable; which yet, for many ages, were credible only to that faith, which is the evidence of things not seen, because altogether extraordinary and inexplicable. But it is objected, that *David's* distemper is characterized by many symptoms and circumstances, which cannot be referred to the *small-pox*; particularly



that conspiracy was, (for we hear only of one) and how it was carried on, will be seen in the next chapter. —

WHEN I had proceeded thus far, I judged it proper to submit this dissertation to the perusal of a very learned and judicious physician; whose candour I relied upon, to be informed, whether any objection lay against this account of *Job's* and *David's* distemper, besides those mentioned in the last notes. His answer was, That he apprehended, if *Job's* distemper was not altogether supernatural, that it might be the *elephantiasis*; and referred me, for further information, to *Areteus's* account of that distemper: which accordingly I have considered with all the care I could; and find, there are many symptoms in

particularly, pains in the bones, and ulcers in the loins. I answer, That distempers are often complicated, perhaps beyond any thing that can well be computed, either from the principles of physic, or the observations of physicians. *David* had undergone great hardships in his youth; had lain long and often in camps and caves; and it is no uncommon thing, with men of that character, to feel pains and aches in their bones, in their advanced years; and it is possible that these pains and aches might have been attended with ulcers in his kidneys. The same effects might possibly arise from many other causes, which I cannot pretend to determine or pronounce upon.

But it is objected, That *David* speaks of his sickness in the present tense, as if he wrote his *Psalms* when he was actually under it; which was impossible to be done in the *small-pox*.

I answer, That no licence is more familiar to poets, than speaking of things past, in the present tense; especially when the description is enlivened, as it very often is, by so doing. And I think, there is a particular beauty in describing distempers in that manner; because it makes the distress present to the reader. —

Besides that several passages in the thirty-eighth *Psalms* plainly refer to a time past: particularly the 11th, 12th, and 13th verses.

which



which these diseases agree ; and yet they are, upon the whole, very different.

THE *elephantiasis*, and *small-pox*, are both infectious distempers ; and men often fly from their nearest friends, when infected by them : the body is swelled, and the skin is broken, in both, and the breath tainted ; and both are attended, at certain periods, with intense itchings ; and both are vexed with disturbed and frightful dreams (as all feverish disorders are) : and the *small-pox* is sometimes attended with a difficulty of breathing, as the *elephantiasis* always is with a kind of strangling : so far they agree. But here they differ : the *elephantiasis* never breaks out thro' all the skin at once, as the *small-pox* does ; it begins with a burning in the bowels, and next appears in the face, which it swells, burnishes, and brightens ; and from the moment it appears there, it is absolutely mortal ; nor did any human creature ever survive it. In the *elephantiasis*, the eyes are cloudy, and become of a brassy colour ; and the brows swelled, and let down over the eyes, like those of an angry lion. In the *small-pox*, the eye-lids are closed and conglutinated, and the eyes not clouded, but absolutely darkened, as *Job's* were.

IN the *elephantiasis*, the soles of the feet are cracked, but no boils either there, or on the crown of the head, as *Job* had, and as is common in the *small-pox*. In the *elephantiasis*, the patients are slothful and sleepy, from the beginning to the end : *Job's* distemper was sleepless and restless, as the *small-pox* often is.

JOB's distemper was attended with vomiting, with pains in his back, with loathing of food, and loss of skin: all these are attendants upon the *small-pox*, but unknown to the *elephantiasis*.

JOB indeed complains of wrinkles, and it is certain, that the *elephantiasis* wrinkles the skin; but he complains, in the same breath, of being lean and withered\*; whereas, in the *elephantiasis*, there is an universal swelling: and therefore it is reasonable to conclude, that this leanness, and these wrinkles of *Job's*, were the effects of his sorrows, antecedent to that sickness, with which *Satan* smote him.

IT were easy to add more proofs to the same purpose; but, I hope, those I have already urged, will be thought sufficient to evince, that *Job's* distemper was not the *elephantiasis*.

To conclude:

As rational conjectures are oftentimes useful inlets to knowledge, the candid reader will, I hope, be indulgent to this, in relation to *David's* distemper; which I am far from obtruding as a truth: for, after all, possibly all his *Psalms* upon this head may be no more than figurative descriptions of the state of his mind, sick with sin: nor is this supposition ill grounded upon the 4<sup>th</sup> verse of the forty-first *Psalms*, before referred to: *Heal my soul; for I have sinned against thee.* And, agreeably to this way of thinking, we find sin figured out to us, in the prophetic style, under the ideas of *bruises* and *wounds*, and *putrefying sores*, Isa. i. 6.

\* Job xvi. 2.

## C H A P. VIII.

*Abfalom takes the Advantage of his Father's Sicknefs, to form a Conſpiracy againſt him. The Methods he made uſe of to delude the People in his Favour.*

**A**BSALOM had not been long reſtored to his father's favour, before his pride and popularity broke out in an extraordinary manner.

IT is ſufficiently evident, from ſome paſſages in this hiſtory, that *David*, as his ſons grew up, gave each of them ſome patrimony, which he left to their own management (it was not then deemed beneath the dignity of princes, to be early initiated in all the patriarchal arts of rural induſtry). Particularly *Abfalom*, we know, had flocks and fields of corn; and it is probable, that his wealth increaſed in his exile and confinement: not only as his expences might be leſſened on theſe accounts; but alſo, as his circumſtances might be conſiderably bettered, by preſents from his grandfather and the royal family at *Geshur*, who, doubtleſs, conſidered him as the heir apparent to the crown of *Iſrael*; and accordingly encouraged and enabled him to ſupport his pretenſions, and to keep up a port ſuitable to his dignity. And hence it was, in all probability, that when he was received into favour, he ſet up  
a mag-

a magnificent equipage, *prepared him chariots and horses*, and a retinue of no less than *fifty men, to run before him*: possibly, attendants, in appearance; but, in effect, guards.

ABOUT this time, I apprehend it was, that *David* fell sick: and *Absalom*, taking the advantage of that infirm and distressed condition, to which he saw him reduced, laid the foundation of his conspiracy, or rather pursued the plan of his ambition, concerted at *Geshur*. Which probably, at first, meant no more than to secure to himself the succession of the crown, in preference to *Solomon*; for whom *David* designed it. And, seeing the king reduced so low by his distemper, that his life was despaired of; wicked as he was, he might think it better to wait the issue of it, than to embroil his hands in his father's blood, And there is no doubt but the king, who (as we have seen in the last chapter) discovered the conspiracy in his sickness, took immediately measures to defeat it, as soon as he found himself recovering. Nor is it improbable, that he dissimulated his recovery as long as he could, to prevent the effects of his son's ambition and impetuosity, who sufficiently appears, from the forty-first *Psalms*, to have been determined upon his father's destruction, and fully resolved to outdo the malignity of his disease, and cut him off, if that should spare him. For those, I am satisfied, are *Absalom's* own words, recorded by *David* at the 8th verse of that *Psalms*; and now that he lieth, he shall rise up no more.



It must doubtless have been matter of great surprize, and inexpressible affliction, to *David*, to find the two men in the world, whom he seems to have loved and most confided in, combining against him, and compassing his death; *Absalom*, and *Ahithophel*; his son, and his counsellor. And both of these are, as I apprehend, sufficiently and clearly characterized in this last-cited *Psalms*: the vanity and lying spirit of *Absalom* in these words, (*ver. 6.*) *And if he come to see me, he speaketh vanity: his heart gathereth falsehood within himself: when he goeth abroad he telleth it:* and the treachery of *Ahithophel* in these, (*ver. 9.*) *Yea mine own familiar friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, hath lifted up his heel \* against me.*

HERE we see a complaint, not only of trust betrayed, but the rights of hospitality violated: the man that did this, had eaten of his bread †.

IN this exigency *David* had recourse, as usual, to the divine mercy and protection; crying out, (*ver. 10.*) *Thou, O Lord, be merciful to me, and raise me up, that I may requite them.* And, finding their devices so far defeated, as not to terminate in his immediate destruction, he gradually gathered hope and confidence from that delay; which he quickly perceived not to have arisen from any abatement in their malignity,

\* *Query*, Whether this expression might not have given the first hint of the fable of *the Ass and the sick Lion*?

† This shews the sacred regard to the rights of hospitality among the *Jews*, prior to any thing we hear upon that head in the accounts of the *Heathen* world.

but from the interposition of Providence in his behalf (*ver. 11.*): *By this I know, that thou favourest me, because mine enemy doth not triumph over me; and as for me, thou upholdest me in mine integrity, and settest me before thy face for ever.*

IF it be urged, That all this is only a comment upon a *Psalms*, not grounded upon any historical relation; I answer, That this *Psalms* is plainly historical; is confessedly written by *David*, and personally applied to himself; and consequently must refer to some circumstances of his life; and can refer to no other but this; and, when applied to this, gives, as I apprehend, new light to the sacred historian's account of *Absalom's* rebellion.

NOW the sacred historian informs us, (*2 Sam. xv.*) That when the people resorted to the king for justice, on occasion of any controversy which had arisen between them, *Absalom* was early up, and intercepted them as they came to the gate where the king's tribunal was held; and, as they approached, inquired of each of them, What tribe, city, and family they were of, that he might proportion his compliments and civilities according to their quality, and consequence: carested, and deluded them with glosing lyes: pretended to inquire into the merit of their cause; and always found it good and just: sadly lamenting, at the same time, that no man was deputed of the king to hear them; and earnestly wishing, that he were authorized, and in capacity of doing them justice:—*O that I were made judge in the land, that every man which*  
*hath*

*hath any suit or cause, might come unto me; and I would do him justice!* And what was this, in effect, but saying, O that I were in my father's place, I would do justice! — Plainly insinuating, that he would do what others did not.

Now we learn from the preceding part of this history, that *David* was wont to administer justice to his people in person: Why then does *Absalom* lament, that no one was deputed of him, to hear the grievances of his subjects\*? The reason is plain from the forty-first *Psalms*. The king was sick, and could not attend in person; and the people knew it: otherwise *Absalom's* calumny would naturally have been, that the king was grown proud and haughty, and above his business; or else, old and indolent, and negligent of his subjects.

Now, is it to be believed, that *Absalom* could carry on this train of delusion and lyes with the people, for any time, without the king's being informed of it? That is not to be imagined: the proceeding was too public to be concealed. Let us then take it for granted, that the king was quickly informed of it; and found, that a son, who visited him constantly in his sickness, and pretended great solicitude for his health, was at the same time plotting against him; deluding his people with lyes, to his disadvantage; and wishing to be in his place; which was, in effect,

\* It must be owned, that this could only be meant of some important causes and appeals, reserved for the king's hearing; for there were ordinary judges enough, to hear the ordinary course of causes.



wishing him dead. How could he more naturally express himself upon that head, on supposition that he knew all this, than he does in these words of the forty-first *Psaln*, (part of which hath been already recited) *ver. 5. Mine enemies\* speak evil of me: When shall he die, and his name perish?*

VER. 6. *And if he come to see me, he speaketh vanity. His heart conceiveth falsehood within himself: when he goeth abroad he telleth it.* But suppose the king in health, and *Absalom's* crime no more than that of shutting out complainants from his presence, and then lamenting his neglect of administering justice; could there be a greater villainy, than thus to abuse his father, and his prince, in his noblest character, of doing justice and judgment; turning his most valuable talent, and highest merit, as a monarch, into the most crying guilt a governor could fall into? How execrable is ambition, thus building itself upon the basest ingratitude, and cruellest calumny! *O that I were made judge in the land!* —exclaims the abandoned miscreant. Rare character of a judge, compounded of falsehood and flattery, inspiring rebellion, and meditating parricide, and covering his ambition under the specious guide of an humble familiarity! He would not suffer himself to be adored, as his father did; but, when any one came to prostrate

† Here we see *David* speaks, *ver. 5.* indefinitely of his enemies in general, being loth to brand a favourite son; but yet, in the next verse, he limits his reflection to a particular person, who could be no other than *Absalom*.



himself before him, he prevented him; and, before he could reach the earth, caught him in his arms, and embraced him: *When any one, says the text, came nigh to him, to do him obeisance, he put forth his hand, and took him, and kissed him:* rather paying court, than receiving it; as, *Tacitus* tells us, *Otho* adored the people, stretched out his hands, lavished his kisses, and did every thing in the most servile manner, for the sake of sway. *And in this manner, says the sacred historian, did Absalom to all Israel, that came to the king for judgment. So Absalom stole the hearts of the men of Israel.*

ABSALOM robbed his father of the affections of his people, as *Cyrus* the younger did his brother: but parents are more indulgent, more easily deluded, and induced to forgive, than brethren; as will be seen in the sequel of this history.

It must be owned, that *Absalom*, besides his arts of popularity, now recited, had two great natural advantages; which, if they are attended with civility, never fail to win the affection and veneration of the vulgar; a graceful person, and an high birth; being, at once, remarkably beautiful, and royally descended, both by his father and mother. Besides this, *Amnon*, his elder brother, was dead; and so, in all probability, was *Chileab*, inasmuch as we hear no more of him; and *Solomon*, his only competitor for the crown, was yet very young. His father was too indulgent to him: he saw him assume all the state of heir apparent to the crown; yet  
took

took no measures, that we know of, to correct his folly, or repress his pride. And therefore it was not unnatural, that they who favoured *Absalom*, should presume, that his father secretly encouraged what he did not openly controul.

THUS did *David's* infirmities concur, in executing the divine decree, of raising up evil to him out of his own house.

## C H A P. IX.

*Absalom breaks out into open Rebellion, and Ahithophel joins him. David flies from Jerusalem, puts up his Prayers to GOD, and is supported in his Distress.*

WE have seen, in the preceding chapters, *Absalom's* intentions of rebelling against his father: whose unexpected recovery, (under the influence of the divine favour and protection) in all probability, broke his measures for that time; and made him postpone his wicked purpose. Nor can it be imagined, but that *David*, from that time, kept a stricter eye over him: so that he could make no further progress in his evil intentions. In the mean time, his popularity had all the field he could wish: as all the people of *Israel* resorted to *Jerusalem* thrice in every year, on the three solemn festivals; he had so often an opportunity

of paying his court, and insinuating his poison, till the infection spread through the whole body of the realm; and wanted nothing but a fair occasion to display itself in all its malignity: nor was this wanting long.

THE sacred historian informs us, that *Absalom*, under the pretence of a vow, which he had made at *Geshur*, applied to his father, for leave to go and offer some sacrifices at *Hebron*, that antient patriarchal city, and place of his nativity. *Josephus* tells us, that this was done four years after his father's reconciliation to him: which plainly shews this to have been the reading in the text, at that time: as it also was in the time of *Theodoret*, and still is in the *Syrian* and *Arabic*, versions, and many antient manuscripts; altho' the *Hebrew* text now saith, that *this came to pass after forty years*; without computing from whence they began\*.

THE nature of his vow is thus explained by the sacred historian, (2 *Sam.* xv. 8.) who tells us, that *Abjalom* addressed his father in the following manner: *For thy servant vowed a vow, while I abode at Geshur in Syria, saying, If the Lord shall bring me again indeed to Jerusalem, then I will serve the Lord.* This vow, we see, is exactly conceived in the piety of the patriarchal style; and plainly implies, that however he was tempted by his grandfather to serve the

\* Some compute these forty years from *David's* first anointment to the crown by *Samuel*, which they think might then have been made use of, as the year of our Lord often is with us, without being mentioned,

gods of *Geshur*, yet he continued steady to the true religion, and determined against idolatry: which *David*, we may assure ourselves was highly delighted to hear, and accordingly gave a ready consent to the performance of his vow. But, from this very circumstance of *Absalom's* asking and obtaining leave, we may clearly infer, that *David* held him, at this time, under some restraint; which plainly implies, at least, some suspicion of him. The same thing is also, as I apprehend, sufficiently evident, from the companions which *Absalom* took with him to *Hebron*, which were two hundred men out of *Jerusalem*: whom the sacred historian acquits of being any way conscious to his conspiracy; consequently they were such as *David* could no way suspect. *They went in their simplicity*, saith the sacred writer, *and they knew not any thing*. Now, there can be no doubt, but that *Absalom* would much rather have taken some of those along with him, who were more intimately embarked in his interest; but that he knew that could not be done, without awakening his father's jealousy; and, perhaps, defeating his whole design.

THERE is no doubt but *David* also took proper measures to have him watched at *Hebron*: but *Absalom* foresaw this, and prevented all the effects of his father's precautions; for, before he left *Jerusalem*, he took care to send him emissaries throughout all the tribes; doubtless, under colour of inviting persons of distinction to the sacrifice; but, in reality, to carry the watch-word and signal, before agreed on



between them : That, as soon as they should hear the trumpet sound, they should immediately give out the word, at once, That *Absalom* was crowned king at *Hebron*. By which means the people rushed in as a flood, and the conspiracy, like a contagious ulcer, broke out, and came to an head, almost at once.

THE only person mentioned by the sacred historian, as invited to the sacrifice from *Hebron*, is *Ahithophel* the *Gilonite*, *David's* counsellor ; whose arrival, from his own city, from *Giloh*, whither *Absalom* sent for him, seems to have given the finishing stroke to the rebellion. For then the sacred historian immediately adds—*And the conspiracy was strong ; for the people increased continually with Absalom.* *Ahithophel* was too cunning to discover himself, till he saw all things favourable and prosperous on the part of *Absalom* : and they both very well judged, that his accession to the conspiracy, in those circumstances, was the likeliest means to ensure its success.

WE may well imagine, that things could not continue long in this condition, before *David* had a full account of all that passed : the danger was instant, and he took his measures accordingly. The city was not in a condition to sustain a siege ; and, if it were, he did not care to expose a favourite city, built by himself, and the residence of the tabernacle of GOD, to all the evils incident to sieges, and almost inseparable from them. Nor, perhaps, did he care to trust the inhabitants of a place, so long exposed to

to the taint of *Absalom's* temptations\*. However, in appearance, he placed his resolution of leaving the city, to the score of his tenderness and concern for it, and secretly, I doubt not, to his unwillingness to see the flame of civil war lighted up in his country, which could no sooner be kindled, than it must of necessity devour some of his brethren, and perhaps his best subjects. In this distress he immediately summoned all his servants, that were in the city; and said unto them, *Arise, let us flee; for we shall not else escape from Absalom: make speed to depart, lest he overtake us suddenly, and bring evil upon us; and smite the city with the edge of the sword.* He was well acquainted with the

\* This, I think, appears from the fifty-fifth *Psalms*, which, I apprehend to have been meditated, and poured out in prayer to GOD, upon the first discovery of *Absalom's* conspiracy. And from thence it plainly appears, that he had discerned the seeds and workings of a conspiracy in the city, and that *Ahitophel* was at the bottom of it; and not only so, but that *David* foresaw his sudden and sad end.

Ver. 9. *Destroy, O Lord, and divide their tongues: for I have seen violence and strife in the city.*

10. *Day and night they go about it upon the walls thereof: mischief also and sorrow are in the midst of it.*

11. *Wickedness is in the midst thereof: deceit and guile depart not from her streets.*

12. *For it was not an enemy that reproached me; then I could have borne it: neither was it he that hated me, that did magnify himself against me; then I would have hid myself from him.*

13. *But it was thou, a man, mine equal, my guide, and mine acquaintance.*

14. *We took sweet counsel together, and walked unto the house of God in company.*

15. *Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into hell; for wickedness is in their dwellings, and among them.*

young man's impetuosity, and the madness of the people! and judged it better to give way to the fury of the flood, than attempt to stem it in the fulness of its overflowing.

ACCORDINGLY, he instantly quitted the city, with all his servants, and all his household (except ten concubines, whom he left to take care of the house); and dispatched them all before him, over the brook *Kidron*, directing their way to the wilderness; the *Cherethites* and *Pe-lethites*, of whom we have already spoken) and with them six hundred *Gittites*, who very providentially came to him to *Jerusalem* (being banished from *Gath*) but the very day before, with the brave *Ittai* at their head (with all his family); whom *David*, knowing him fatigued with his journey, would, from a noble principle of generosity, (which preferred his friend's relief to his own safety) fain would have him turn back with his brethren; which he gallantly refused to do, vowing, that where-ever *David* was, *in death or life*, there would he his servant be also. All these passed on before, and *David* himself, with his body of brave worthies about him brought up the rear.

AMONG the rest of those who attended the king, when he left the city, and resolved to follow his fate, were *Zadok* and *Abiathar* the priests; *Zadok* attended by all the *Levites*, bearing the ark of the covenant of the LORD: and they set down the ark of GOD before the king, as he stood to see the people pass over the *Kidron* before him: *And Abiathar* saith the text, *went*  
up

up, (probably to some eminence, to review the people as they passed) *until all the people had done passing out of the city.* And the king said unto Zadok, *Carry back the ark of God into the city: if I shall find favour in the eyes of the Lord, he will bring me again, and shew me both it, and his habitation.* But if he thus say, *I have no delight in thee; behold here am I, let him do to me as seemeth good unto him.* He sent back the high-priests, as knowing their character was too sacred to suffer any violence from the usurper, tho' he knew their fidelity to his father: and, for the rest, he wholly submitted himself to the divine disposal. He besought GOD, as, *Alexander Severus*\* told his soldiers, a generous and a wise man should; praying for the best things, and bearing whatever should befall.

DAVID saw plainly that GOD had raised this war against him, in punishment of his guilt, *That God had raised up this evil to him out of his own house;* and I imagine I now hear him taking up the same lamentation, which *Alphonsus* the Wise, king of *Arragon*, afterwards did, upon a like occasion: *I wonder not so much at my people's ingratitude to me, as at my own to GOD.*

IN this spirit of humiliation, *David* would not presume to have the ark, the symbol of the Divine Presence, borne before him in that war: that was an honour, of which he deemed himself utterly unworthy. And therefore, referring himself, and his affairs, with intire resignation, to the disposal of the Divine Providence,

\* *Herodian,*



he remanded *Zadok* and *Abiathar* back to the city, with the ark.

WHEN *David* had given the reasons relating to himself, why he would not have the ark carried before him into the field; he then adds a reason personal to *Zadok*: *Art not thou a seer? Return in peace.* It should seem from hence, that *Zadok* was a prophet: however as a priest, he was a teacher; and, as such, bound to stay with his people in the greatest exigencies, and instruct them in their duty; besides that, by staying to do his duty to his people, he might also do good offices to his prince. And accordingly *David* concerted a method, both with *Zadok* and *Abiathar*, of corresponding with him, and sending him intelligence of all the enemies measures, by their sons, *Akimaz* the son of *Zadok*, and *Jonathan* the son of *Abiathar*.

THIS done, *David* went up the ascent of Mount Olivet, his feet bare, and his head covered; and wept as he went: and all the people that was with him, covered every man his head; and they went up weeping. And all the country wept with a loud voice.—

How *David's* thoughts were employed in this sad reverse of his fortune, I think, sufficiently appears from the forty-third *Psalms*. And indeed it needs so little sagacity to see, or ingenuity to own, that the meditations there recorded are peculiarly suited to this occasion, that commentators are agreed in the point: nor can any thing be imagined more natural to a man  
of

of his character, and under those circumstances, than that solemn appeal to the divine justice, against a vile son, and a wicked people, with which this *Psalms* begins\*; or the earnest supplication for relief and restoration, which follows it†; or that lively expression of hope, and confidence in the divine protection, which concludes it‡.

IF any reader should find any difficulty in concluding this *Psalms* to have been meditated upon this occasion; let him reflect, whether there can be any thing extraordinary in supposing some memorial to have been left to us of *David's* meditations, upon an occasion so very extraordinary; for surely a more memorable event was never recorded in history; nor a more moving spectacle ever exhibited to mortal eyes! A king, venerable for his years and victories; sacred in the characters both of his piety and prophecy; renowned for prowess, and

\* Judge me, O God, and plead my cause against an ungodly nation: O deliver me from the deceitful and unjust man.

Ver. 2. For thou art the God of my strength. Why dost thou cast me off? Why go I mourning because of the oppression of the enemy?

† Ver. 3. O send out thy light and thy truth; let them lead me, let them bring me unto thy holy hill, and to thy tabernacles.

‡ Ver. 4. Then will I go unto the altar of God, unto God my exceeding joy: yea, upon the harp will I praise thee, O God, my God.

† Ver. 5. Why art thou cast down, O my soul? And why art thou disquieted within me? Hope in God; for I shall yet praise him, who is the health of my countenance, and my God.

revered for wisdom; reduced to the condition of a fugitive! to a sudden and extreme necessity of flying for his life, from the presence of his own son, his darling and delight! and a whole country loudly lamenting his fate!

IN this condition *David* went up the *Mount*, and when he reached the summit of it, fell down prostrate \* before GOD: and again put up his prayers for protection and deliverance, to that mighty Being, *who stilleth the raging of the sea, and the madness of the people*; chiefly (as it is generally believed) in the words of the third *Psalms*: and was immediately inspired with that consolation, and strong confidence of conquering his enemies, recorded in the close of it, and, in all probability, poured out that moment, in the presence of all his people: — *Arise, O Lord; save me, O my God; for thou hast smitten all mine enemies upon cheek-bone. Thou hast broken the teeth of the ungodly. Salvation belongeth unto the Lord: thy blessing is upon thy people.*

As *David* was going up the *Mount*, word was brought him, that *Achishophel* was among the conspirators: and the moment he heard it, he put up his humble and earnest supplication to that GOD, *who leadeth counsellors away spoiled,*

\* *Josephus* tells us, that, when *David* reached the top of the mountain, he took a view of the city, and prayed to GOD, with abundance of tears. The candid reader will perhaps think it worth his notice, that *Josephus* should tell us, That *David* wept, and viewed the city, in the same spot from which the evangelist informs us that our blessed Saviour wept over it.

*and maketh the judges fools\*: O Lord, I pray thee, turn the counsel of Abithophel into foolishness.* And, when he had finished his devotions upon the Mount, it pleased GOD to furnish him, at that moment, with the means of effecting what he prayed for: for, behold *Hushai the Archite, David's friend*, came, that instant, to meet him, *with his coat rent, and earth upon his head*: and *David's* good genius suggested to him, the same instant, the most probable method of defeating the devices of *Abithophel*, by the means of his friend.

HUSHAI was famous in the cabinet, but unpractised in the camp: *David* therefore told him, That if he should go with him he would be a burden to him (he would but add to the number of his household, not his soldiers); saying, That he himself had no sure resource, or means of support: but if he would return to the city, and submit to *Absalom*, he might be a means of defeating the counsels of *Abithophel*, in his prince's favour; and, at the same time, have an opportunity of letting him into all the secrets of the enemy, by informing *Zadok* and *Abiathar* of every thing that passed, who would transmit the account by their sons. Accordingly *Hushai* returned to *Jerusalem*, and reached the city soon after *Absalom* had entered it.

\* *Job. xii. 17. also ver. 20. He removeth away the speech of the trusty, and taketh away the understanding of the aged.*



## C H A P. X.

*Ziba's treachery to Mephibosheth, and DAVID's too hasty Grant of his supposed Forfeiture. Shimei curses DAVID, who will not suffer him to be chastised. The Curses in the Psalms accounted for from this Passage. Hushai insinuates himself into Absalom's Favour; and, by defeating Ahithophel's Advice, saves DAVID.*

WHEN *David* knew with certainty, that *Ahithophel* was among the conspirators, he saw his danger in all its strength. An hot-headed young man, high in vanity, extravagant in hope, and easily overset with success, was not an object of much terror, to a man of *David's* great experience, and consummate wisdom; but the prowess, popularity, and numbers of such a man, conducted by the calm skill and prudence of an *Ahithophel*, was sufficient matter of just fear. *David*, however, sunk not under it; but had recourse, as usual, to the protection of that GOD, who only could deliver him, and who had never failed him in distress; beseeching him to confound and infatuate the counsel of *Ahithophel*. *Ahithophel* was one of those prime politicians, (as they are deemed) who are often accounted wiser than others, merely because

because they are more wicked; for, having no restraint of conscience, or fear of GOD, they can often advise, and sometimes effect, what others cannot, that is, dare not; and are therefore, by such as judge only of things by their present advantage or expediency, admired as sage and sagacious: but are, in the account of all-seeing and unerring Wisdom, numbered among those whose wisdom is foolishness, *and the end thereof are the ways of death.*

DAVID well knew, that the evil course, in which *Ahithophel* was embarked, could only be conducted by wicked measures; and therefore it was a duty of true religion, to beseech GOD to confound his counsels. And the most probable human means of effecting this, was, as he judged, by opposing the counsels of *Hushai* to them: and he proceeded accordingly.

WHEN *David* had given his instructions to *Hushai* and the priests, he pursued his march towards the wilderness, and resolved to get out of the reach of the impending storm as fast as he could, and shun its first fury at any rate, well knowing, that to gain time, was to gain a thousand means of dispersing it. He had passed but a little way beyond the summit of *Mount Olivet*, before *Ziba* came up with him with two asses saddled, and heavy laden with bread, and fruits, and wine\*. Among the rest are mentioned, *an hundred bunches of summer fruits*, which are very

\* 2. Sam. xvi. 1. *Two hundred loaves of bread, an hundred bunches of raisins, and an hundred summer-fruits, and a bottle of wine.*

reasonably supposed to be the early fig: consequently, this flight of *David's* was about the beginning of summer: at which time a present of fruits must have been very seasonable and refreshing. The king asked *Ziba*, What he meant by these things? probably imagining that they were a present from *Mephibosheth*. For when *Ziba* answered, that the asses were for the service of his majesty's household; and the wine and fruits, for the refreshment of such of them as might be weary and faint in the wilderness; the king immediately replied, *And where is thy master's son?* To which, that artful, false villain immediately answered, That he staid in the city, in hopes that this commotion might calm after some time, and end in a revolution in his favour. *David*, too rashly credulous, although of an unsuspected servant, against the son of a tried friend, and too hastily resenting his imagined ingratitude, immediately concluded *Mephibosheth* a traitor, who had forfeited his whole fortune, and accordingly bestowed the forfeiture upon his informer — *Thine*, says he to *Ziba*, *are all that pertained to Mephibosheth* — verifying that fine observation of *Seneca*, *That kings give many things with covered eyes, especially in time of war.* To that sudden and great grant the gluttonous flatterer made no other return, than an humble and earnest supplication for the continuance of his majesty's favour to him: *I humbly beseech thee, that I may find grace in thy sight, my lord, O king* — As if he scarcely felt that he was rewarded  
for

for his calumny, a calumny for which he well deserved to have been racked.

WHEN the king reached *Bahurim*, the next village in his way to the wilderness, *Shimei, the son of Gera*, of the family of *Saul*, came out; and cursed him to his face, with repeated curses; and, not contented with cursing, he cast stones at him, and at all his servants that attended him; treating him with as much indignity as he would a dog; bidding him *get out, bloody man* as he was, and *a man of Belial*: adding, That God had now brought vengeance upon him for all the blood of the house of *Saul*, and had now delivered the throne, which he had usurped, into the hand of his son *Abshalom*: That he was caught in his own wiles, because he was a bloody man. This, surely, was one of the severest trials of patience, that ever human magnanimity endured. The accusation was notoriously false, and the king could, for that reason, bear it the better; but his servants saw it not, in the light of their master's equanimity, but his enemy's insolence. *Abishai, David's nephew*, could not bear it; but begged the king's permission to take off the traitor's head that uttered it: which *David* absolutely refused, and added a rebuke to his refusal — *What have I to do with you, ye sons of Zeruiab? So let him curse, because the Lord hath said unto him, Curse David. Who then shall say, Wherefore hast thou done so?* Here we have, in three words, a clear comment upon all the curses throughout *David's Psalms*: they are all



prophetic denunciations of divine vengeance. *David* cursed, because *GOD* commanded him; and how could he tell but *Skimei* had the same commission to curse him; although, perhaps, in his rage he exceeded it? He knew himself innocent of the blood of *Saul*, now charged upon him; but, at the same time, he knew himself guilty of the blood of *Uriah*: and who knew, whether this was not part of the vengeance due to it?

THE king then turning to *Abishai*, and the rest of his servants who were about him, asked them, How it could be surprising to see a *Benjamite* revile him, when they beheld his own son in rebellion against him, and seeking his life? This however, strange as it was, was evidently the work of *GOD*; who had declared, he would raise up evil to him, out of his own house (and did so, by permitting the son's guilt to chastise the father's); and therefore he concluded, the other was so too: and, in that persuasion, he peremptorily commanded his servants; *Let him alone, let him curse; for the Lord hath bidden him.* He then immediately added — *It may be, that the Lord will look on mine affliction, and that the Lord will requite me good, for his cursing, this day.* Although this was a chastisement from *GOD* upon him, yet, if he bore it as became him, it might become a means of mercy to him: his humble submission and resignation might call down the divine commiseration upon his patience and penitence. *David's* patience but more inflamed *Shimei's* insolence. And,

as *David* and his servants marched along, *Shimei* kept pace with them upon the side of an adjacent hill; and still continued cursing, reviling, and throwing dust and stones, unchastised. *David* endured it all: *when he was reviled, he reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed his cause to Him who judgeth righteously* \*. How far he was, in this instance, an emblem of his suffering SON, is not, I hope, hard to discern, or adventurous to assert. But, as it is not part of my purpose to pursue this parallel, I forbear; and only beg leave to add, that this passage is a strong instance to shew, how strict and exemplary a discipline reigned throughout *David's* forces. I own I have some doubt, whether a body of *European* officers, encompassing their general, so treated, would wait his orders to dispatch the reviler.

How far *David* marched before he, his family, and his forces, took any refreshment, is no where mentioned by the sacred writer: but this defect is supplied by *Josepkus*, who gives us to understand, that he suffered his people to take no refreshment, till they reached the banks of *Jordan*. Here then let us leave him for a while, and return to *Absalom*.

WHEN *David* quitted *Jerusalem*, it was upon a persuasion, that *Absalom* would make all the haste he could to possess himself of the capital, and, if possible, to surprise his father in it.

\* 1 Pet. ii. 23.

And as he judged, so it came to pass; for he, and all his people, immediately marched to *Jerusalem*, and *Ahithophel* with him. And it should seem, from the sacred historian, that they arrived there a considerable time before *David* reached the banks of the *Jordan*. For, when *Hushai* came to the city, he found *Absalom* in quiet possession, and just going to call a council upon the present posture of affairs: *Hushai*, mindful of his instructions, lost no time to pay his court, and profess his allegiance: but, immediately coming up to *Absalom*, addressed him in the customary form of salutation to kings; or rather, with a seemingly peculiar zeal for his service, he redoubled the salutation, *God save the king! God save the king! Absalom*, amazed at what he heard, upbraided him with his ingratitude, in deserting *David*—and asked him; *Is this thy kindness to thy friend?* He did not dare to say, To my father (for that question would have carried a heavier reproach upon himself); and therefore he mentioned only the relation which *Hushai* had to *David*; and, dwelling upon that, asked him, Why he went not with his friend? In answer to which, *Hushai* gave him to understand, that his allegiance was governed by other principles than those of private friendship; that the appointment of God, and the election of his people, determined him in the object of his duty: and what should hinder him from serving the son with as much fidelity, as he had served the father? The attentive reader will, I am persuaded, find this salutation,



salutation, and whole apology, as evidently evasive, and calculated to delude, as art could contrive them; for he neither prays personally for *Abfalom*, nor professes allegiance to him: yet the bait took, and *Abfalom's* self-sufficiency, gross as the delusion was, swallowed it whole. And *Hushai* (who was considered as a good courtier, that followed fortune) was immediately admitted of his council, though not of his cabinet. The consultation then began. What was to be done next? And *Ahithophel*, the arch-counsellor, immediately advised *Abfalom* to go in to his father's concubines, which he had left to keep the house, before the face of all *Israel*; an action which would demonstrate his enmity to his father irreconcilable; and consequently, such as would firmly attach all those to his interest, who were disaffected to *David*, when they once saw they were out of all danger of being sacrificed to any future possible reconciliation between the father and son. An advice for the present, and in appearance, wise, but in reality pernicious. Could not this long-headed, sagacious statesman foresee, that this action, for which some men would now become more attached to *Abfalom*, must one day make him detestable in their eyes, when they reflected upon the horror of it? A guilt made mortal by the law of GOD\*, and not named even among the *Gentiles*: a guilt for which they must one day judge him more

\* Levit. xx. 11.



worthy to lose his crown, than *Reuben* his birth-right \*. However, this hellish advice was immediately embraced; for *Ahithophel's* advice was then deemed as unerring, as if the oracle of GOD had dictated it †. A tent was immediately spread upon the house-top; and *Ab-salom* went in unto his father's concubines, in the sight of all *Israel*. An action of such profligate impiety, and abandoned impudence, as it were to be wished no sun had seen, or history related. Then was *David's* adultery (planned, and, it may be, perpetrated in the same place) judicially chastised, and GOD's vengeance, denounced upon it by his prophet, signally executed; and his wives prostituted in the sight of the sun §, 2 Sam. xii. 11. But, before this was done, *Ahithophel* advised, that twelve thousand choice men might be put under his command, with whom he would undertake to pursue and attack *David*; which he must do to great advantage, when he should come upon him, *weary and weak-handed*, as he himself expressed it, which could scarcely fail to strike a terror into the few forces which attended him: and, when they fled, the king would become an easy prey. He then added, that he would smite the *king only*, and proclaim pardon to all the rest; by which means, he

\* 1 Chron. v. 1.

† 2 Sam. xvi. 23.

§ N. B. The Hebrew word, which is here rendered *wives*, is, in the fifteenth chapter of the second book of *Samuel*, verse 16th, translated *women*: and therefore whoever attends to the original, will find *Nathan's* prophecy upon this point literally accomplished.

would easily bring over their allegiance to *Absalom*, and lead them all back in submission to him; or, if they were not immediately brought back, yet the killing of the king would effectually end the contest: *I, says he, will smite the king only. And I will bring back all the people unto thee. The man whom thou seekest, is as if all returned: so all the people shall be in peace.*

THE attentive reader will easily perceive, that this advice well justifies the character given of him in the Scripture: it was, in its several parts, admirably fitted, both to the inclinations and interest of his pupil: he consigned him to his pleasures, and took all the danger to himself; and at the same time he relieved his little remains of humanity, (if he had any) from the necessity of embruing his hands in his father's blood, His incest was, for the present, personal guilt enough: that act of outrage would make *Absalom's* reconciliation with his father, desperate: and, whilst he indulged his evil appetite, *Ahithophel*, with a chosen band, would pursue and surprise *David*. Nothing could be more worldly wise, or more hellishly wicked; it was indeed as the advice of an oracle, but very different from that dictated by the Spirit of GOD. And yet, horrid as it was, it pleased that vile son, and his associates: *And the saying pleased Absalom well,* (says the sacred writer) *and all the elders of Israel.* However, for greater security, *Absalom* resolved to advise with *Hushai* also, whose counsel he knew

was of great weight with his father: and accordingly sending for him, and telling him what *Abithophel* advised, in relation to the attempt upon his father, he desired to know his opinion upon that point. To which *Hushai*, continuing his train of delusion, answered with great subtilty and address, *The counsel that Abithophel hath given, is not good at this time.*

THE apparent sense of this equivocation was, that, however that great counsellor excelled in other instances of wisdom, yet in this he failed. He then set himself to oppose every article of *Abithophel's* advice, some openly, and others covertly, with signal dexterity, and plausibility of reason. He began with making a lively and dreadful description of the enemies *Abfalom* had to deal with: that *David* and his worthies, who attended him, were all mighty men of war; at all times terrible to the bravest foes; but much more so at this time, when, being driven from their families, they were as so many enraged bears robbed of their whelps; and when, in the first furious efforts of their rage, they should strike a terror into their invaders, which they would not fail to do, the panic would easily be diffused through the rest of their pursuers, and intimidate the bravest of his forces. Besides all this, the project of surprising *David* was very little considered; he was a man too guarded for such an attempt; and was, before that time, well secured in some secret and separate retreat, (for all such were well known to him) out of the reach of surprize. His ad-



vice therefore was, that *Absalom* should wait till he had a complete army, made up of the bravest men of all the tribes, to which every thing must yield; headed by *Absalom* himself in person (insinuating that the glory of the victory belonged to him alone, and that nobody should pretend to rob him of it). And whereas it was urged by *Ahithophel*, that he would smite the king only, as if all *Absalom's* ends were to be attained by his death, *Hushai* insinuates, that the death of competitors was as necessary as that of the king, at least his death who was divinely designed for the throne. And therefore he adds, that they should come upon *David*, where he could not be concealed, and whence he could not escape\*, *nor any one of those that were with him*: and that, if he refuged himself, for more security, in any one of the cities of *Israel*, they would have numbers enough to pull it down, stone by stone, about his ears. The expression in the original is very remarkable: *Then shall all Israel bring ropes to that city, and we will draw it into the river.* The meaning of which threat I apprehend to be this:

\* The original text is, in this place, very beautiful and expressive: *So shall we come upon him in some place where he shall be found, and we will light upon him as the dew falleth on the ground: and of him, and of all the men that are with him, there shall not be left so much as one.* The dew in *Palesine* (as in several other climates) falls fast and sudden; and is therefore no unapt emblem of an active expeditious soldiery: and it was perhaps for this reason, that the *Romans* called their light-armed forces *rorarii*. The dew falls upon every spot of the earth; not a blade of grass escapes it. A numerous army resembles it in this respect; it is able to search every-where.

That



That they would come before that city with those cranes\*, or hooks, which the antients were wont to throw upon the battlements of walls; and with which, by the help of ropes fastened to them, they were wont to pull them down piece-meal into the rivers or trenches (filled with water) which encompassed them. As *Ahithophel* proposed all imaginable advantage to the evil cause he was engaged in, from expedition, upon that principle mentioned by *Tacitus*, That nothing determines civil discords so happily as dispatch; *Hushai*, on the contrary, wholly laid himself out to protract, and to delay. For delay would not only ward off *David's* present danger; but would also, as the same *Tacitus* observes, give ill men time to repent, and the good to unite. And it is certain, that, in all contests of this kind, that remark of *Livy* will always hold good, That, when men have time to think, there will never be wanting who will be glad to gain the favour of the right side, by adhering to the public good. These were the principles of *Hushai's* advice; and his advice as much better suited to *Absalom's* cruelty, as well as his vanity, and seemingly to the interest of his ambition, as well as the safety of his followers, (who cared to put nothing to the hazard of a small party) easily prevailed: for so it seemed good to Almighty God, to infatuate the counsels of *David's* enemies, and defeat their devices.

\* See *Rallin's History*, Vol. xii. Plate the 25th explained.

## C H A P X I.

*Hushai sends David Intelligence of all that passed in Absalom's Council, earnestly intreating him to pass over Jordan that very Night; which was done accordingly. Ahithophel's sudden and sad End. Mr. Bayle's important Decision upon Hushai's Deception of Absalom considered, with all the Deference due to it.*

**A**BSALOM's council had no sooner broken up, than *Hushai* hastened to *Zadok* and *Abiathar*, to inform them of what passed; and to advise them to send *David* immediate intelligence of it; adding this particular caution and advice from himself, to the king, That he should by no means think of resting all night in the wilderness; but make all possible dispatch to pass the *Jordan* with his household, and all his forces, *Lest the king, says he, be swallowed up, and all the people that are with him.*

Now *Jonathan* and *Ahimaaz*, who were to carry the intelligence, had not yet returned into the city; but found some pretence for tarrying without the walls, at a place called *En-rogel*, or *The Fuller's Fountain*; and, probably, upon some pretence of washing and cleansing themselves from some legal pollution. And their fathers had

had no way of communicating *Hushai's* advice to them, but by the means of a girl, whom, doubtless, they knew to be intelligent and faithful; and such a person, being a safe messenger, must, in all probability, have been a very proper one, because least liable to be suspected; for what could be less so, than a girl going to a well, where such persons have calls at all times? However, notwithstanding all their caution, they were observed by a lad, (who informed *Abshalom*) and immediately pursued. *Jonathan* and *Akimaaz* made the best of their way, with all possible dispatch, towards *David*: but, finding themselves hotly pursued, they fled to a friend's house in *Bahurim*; who having a well in his court-yard, which probably was then dry, or, at least, not very deep, they went down into it; where a woman, covering the well, and spreading some ground-corn over it, as it were to be sunned and dried, effectually concealed them. *Abshalom's* messengers were close at their heels; and, inquiring of the woman where *Jonathan* and *Akimaaz* were, (which sufficiently implies that they had seen them turn into the house) she told them, as *Josephus* and the *Vulgate* understand the text, That they just drank a little water, and hasted forward. Upon which they continued their pursuit; but, not being able to find them, after all the search and inquiry they could make, they returned to *Jerusalem*. And as soon as they were returned, *Jonathan* and *Akimaaz* came up from their concealment, and made the best of their way to  
*David*;

*David*; whom they informed of all that had passed in *Abſalom's* council, and added *Huſhai's* earneſt advice and intreaty, that he would immediately paſs over the river, and place himſelf and his people in ſafety, from ſurprize, in caſe things ſhould take another turn, and *Ahithophel's* counſel prevail over *Huſhai's*. *David* inſtantly obeyed the friendly monition given him, with ſuch diligence and diſpatch, that before the next morning he and all his people were ſafe on the other ſide of the *Jordan*: which, as it required a conſiderable number of boats, or floats of ſome kind, to convey them over a river not fordable, muſt, in all probability, have been attended with ſome circumſtances of felicity, favoured by Providence. And we need not doubt, but he now took as much care to retard the paſſage of his enemies, in caſe they purſued him, as he had before done, to diſpatch his own.

I HAVE often thought, that an hiſtory of *David's* piety, in all the various events of his life, could it be regularly purſued, and clearly connected, would, under the conduct of a maſterly pen, make one of the moſt curious and entertaining (as well as uſeful) relations the world ever beheld.

WE have already ſeen him ſending back the ark of God, as from one unworthy the divine preſence and protection: we have ſeen him aſcending *Mount Olivet*, in all the diſtreſs of humiliation and penitence; his head covered, and his feet bare, and weeping as he went.—

We



We have seen him prostrate on the summit of it, pouring out his supplications, and proclaiming his confidence in God.

LET us now follow him to the wilderness; and there we shall see him again (upon finding, that his *enemies took counsel against him, and laid wait for his soul*) renewing his supplications in the most affecting and pathetic strains, that ever were penned \*. Although his enemies had said, *ver. 11. God hath forsaken him: pursue him, and take him; for there is none to deliver him;* yet was his hope still strong in that GOD, that he would *deliver him out of the hand of the unrighteous and cruel man*. GOD, who had protected him in the vigour of youth, he prayed, and he confided, would not now fail him, in the infirmities of age. What though his own strength was decayed? he would go against his enemies, *in the strength of the Lord God*†. Now also, *when I am old and grey-headed, O God, forsake me not, until I have shewed thy strength unto this generation, and thy power unto all them that are yet to come.*

IT could neither be denied nor dissembled, that he was now reduced to great distress; but, great as his distresses were, he had been redeemed from greater. His enemies looked upon him as a dead man; but they forgot, how

\* Psalm lxxi. *In thee, O Lord, have I put my trust.—Deliver me in thy righteousness, and cause me to escape—Deliver me, O my God, out of the hand of the wicked, out of the hand of the unrighteous and cruel man.—Cast me not off in the time of old age: forsake me not, when my strength faileth.*

† Ver. 16, 17, 18.

easily the hand of GOD could raise him up again, as from the grave; and not only renew, but augment his grandeur. *Thou which hast shewed me great and sore troubles, shall quicken me again; and shalt bring me up again from the depths of the earth—Thou shalt increase my greatness—I will also praise thee upon the psaltery, &c.—For they are confounded, they are brought into shame, that seek my hurt.*

So he confided, and so it came to pass; and *Ahithophel*, the enemy's sarch-counsellor, was the first instance of GOD's vengeance upon that rebel race. For finding his hellish, but salutary advice to *Absalom*, despised, and foreseeing from thence, that *David* must quickly prevail against his infatuated enemies, he immediately returned to his own city; *put his household in order, and (in desperation) hanged himself, says the text, and died.*

WHEN he had contrived, inspired, diffused, and propagated evil, through an innumerable multitude, and loaded his soul with all the horrors of complicated guilt that hell could devise; treachery, rebellion, incest, parricide! he hurried it to all the vengeance due to it from eternal justice: to prevent all possibility of reparation and repentance, he died in the act of self-murder. So perished the great *Machiavel* of that age; the very wisest of the very wisemen of this world! *whose God is their belly, whose glory is their shame, and whose end is destruction.*

BUT it is time to return to *David*—

DAVID and his son now set themselves to make the best preparations they could; the one to carry on his unnatural rebellion, and the other to defeat it.

AND here, perhaps, the reader may not think it amiss to leave it awhile, and employ a few moments in reflections, not foreign from the affair before us.

AND first: it is remarkable that this rebellion was, in all appearance, the real, although remote consequence of *David's* adultery. For *Bathsheba* was the daughter of *Eliam*\*, and we find *Eliam*, the son of *Ahitophel*, among *David's* worthies†: consequently, this *Eliam* was, in all probability, the father of *Bathsheba*; and if so, then may we fairly conclude, that *Ahitophel* engaged in this conspiracy, in revenge for the dishonour done to his family, in the person of *Bathsheba*, which no subsequent marriage could repair or efface; and I think, we may plainly perceive, in the determined cruelty of *Ahitophel's* advice and resolution to destroy *David* with his own hands, all the malice and rancour of a particular and personal revenge. And if this be the true state of the case, which I am far from adventuring to pronounce, (for indeed there are strong probabilities on the other side) then was verified that fine observation, in *the Wisdom of Solomon*, (recounted among the appointments of Providence) That *wherewithal a man sinneth, by the same also shall he be punished.*

\* 2 Sam. xi. 3.

† 2 Sam. xxiii. 34.



IN the next place I cannot but reflect with astonishment, upon the applause which Mr. *Bayle* hath gained; and with horror, upon the evil errors he hath spread by his casuistry! and particularly in the article of *David*. He is very angry with *Hushai* for deceiving *Absalom*; but much more with *David*, for advising him to it. A conduct which he loads with all the guilt of seducing his friend into a damnable sin, which he should rather have lost his crown, than have suffered him to commit.

IF Mr. *Bayle* had been acquainted with the first principles and rudiments of the law of nature, he could not but know that *Absalom*, a traitor, a murderer, a rebel, (and, as far as in him lay, a parricide) had, as such, forfeited all the rights of society; but more especially as a rebel: for a rebel, who sets himself to overturn the established government, order, and peace of any community, does, by that hostile attempt, actually divest himself of all social rights in that community. And consequently *Hushai* could no more be guilty of sin, in deceiving him, in order to defeat the purposes of his villainy, than he could be guilty of a sin, in deceiving a mad dog, and turning him away from murdering his best friends.

IT is scarcely to be imagined, how any casuist could be so sillily scrupulous, as to make the least doubt, whether any man in his senses had a right to deceive a mad-man, (whose only demerit is a disturbed brain) and delude him from



his evil purposes: how much more then, a deliberate, determined traitor, who had forfeited all the rights of humanity, as well as society? a black parricide, mad with pride, ambition, and cruelty! the worst excesses and outrages of a corrupt heart! To defeat the horrid purposes of this monster's villainy, to rob him of the glory of massacring the best friends of his family, of imbruing his hands in the blood of all his brethren, and crowning rebellion and murder with parricide! to take measures to restore this wretch, once more, to the mercy of a tender forgiving father; and, in consequence, to repentance, and a right sense of duty, *to save his soul alive!*—how crying a guilt was it in *David*, to form a design of effecting all this; and how damnable a sin in *Hushai*, to execute it!

---

## C H A P. XII.

*DAVID goes to Mahanaim, and gathers an Army. Absalom passes the Jordan, and pitches in the Land of Gilead. DAVID sends out his Forces against him, under the Command of Joab, Abishai, and Ittai.*

**W**HEN *David* had passed the *Jordan*, he went directly to *Mahanaim*, lately the residence of *Isbbosheth*, and antiently the resting-place

place of *Jacob*; where GOD had placed him, under the protection of two hosts of *Angels*. The king's distress there, at this time, naturally led him to reflect upon the distress of his great ancestor, in the same place: where being encompassed with a weak and helpless family of wives and children, as *David* now was, news was brought him, that his brother *Esau* was coming against him with a strong band of men, and, as he had too much reason to apprehend, with an hostile disposition to destroy him. Could any thing be more natural, than for *David* to cry out, upon that occasion, as he doth in the thirty-fourth *Psalms*? ver. 6, 7. *This poor man cried, and the Lord heard him, and saved him out of all his troubles. The angel of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them.* That GOD, who delivered *Jacob* from his brother, could, with equal ease, deliver *David* from his cruel son. The meek and humble *Jacob* trusted in GOD, and was delivered; and why might not *David* hope for a like deliverance, under the same spirit of humiliation, and trust in the divine protection? It is scarcely to be imagined, how *David* could avoid falling into this train of thinking, in this place, at this time; and, if he did fall into it, it is less to be imagined, how he could refrain from expressing it; at least, so far, as to leave some traces and memorials of it behind him. And such memorials, (beside that now cited) I apprehend, are plainly to be found in the twenty-second and twenty-fifth *Psalms*; both of which

may very naturally be presumed to have been written on this occasion. Thus *Psalms* xxii. ver. 1, 2, 3, 4, &c. *My God, look upon me: Why hast thou forsaken me?—And thou continuest holy, O thou worship of Israel. Our fathers trusted in thee, and thou didst deliver them, &c.* GOD had made good his promises to *Jacob*—his promises made to him in this very place. *The worship of Israel still continued holy*: Why then should not *David* hope to have his promises made good to him also, although he was now, in all appearance, upon the very brink of ruin? So also, *Psal.* xxv. ver. 1, &c. *My God, I have put my trust in thee; let me not be confounded, neither let mine enemies triumph over me: for all they that hope in thee shall not be ashamed; but such as transgress without a cause, shall be put to confusion—Lead me forth into thy truth—Call to remembrance, O Lord, thy tender mercies, which have been ever of old—* He then proceeds to implore pardon for his sins, the true cause of all his calamities. And rightly recollecting, that he himself was *Jacob's* representative, and heir of the promises made to him, he concludes, with supplicating, as in his person, *Deliver Israel, O God, out of all his troubles.* Such sincere penitence, such steady faith, such persevering piety, could not fail to prevail in the end. His prayers were heard; and, to shew they were, it pleased GOD to inspire (in this critical and decisive juncture) the hearts of many faithful subjects, and brave soldiers, with signal zeal for his service; and they resorted

to him from all quarters, with such expedition, and in such numbers, that in a few days he had a complete army at his command, which he divided into four bodies: one he reserved within the city, and over the other three he placed three brave captains, *Joab*, *Abishai*, and *Ittai*, one at the head of each. Provisions also of all kinds were poured in upon him, from persons of the greatest distinction throughout all the regions round about: among whom, *Shobi*, the son of *Nakash*, of *Rabbah* of the children of *Ammon*, is placed first. And as the provisions sent were in great plenty, (with utensils of various kinds) sufficient for *David*, and all his forces, this shews the power and wealth of those that supplied them, as well as their affection to *David*. And therefore the inference from hence is natural, that when *David* chastised the agents and instruments of *Hanun's* tyranny, he left *Shobi* in the regency of the country, with such marks of kindness and friendship to him, as now engaged *Shobi*, in his turn, to give the king all possible demonstrations of affection and gratitude, in his distress; a season in which any other principles, than gratitude and affection, would have operated in a very different manner. And some of the utensils sent, the beds particularly, shew a peculiar and personal concern for the ease and conveniency both of *David* and his family; and were indeed (in those circumstances) the proper presents of one prince to another, personally esteemed and honoured.



THE next man of consequence, who distinguished himself in his affection and zeal for *David*, on this occasion, was *Machir*, the son of *Ammiel*, of *Lodebar*, the friend and protector of *Mephibosheth*; who, from that very character, must be presumed to have been, at first, in some degree, disaffected to *David*; but now, not only reconciled, but zealously attached to him; and probably, in a great measure, from the king's most noble manner of treating *Mephibosheth*. The last of those who had now distinguished their zeal for *David*, is *Barzillai*, the *Gileadite*; a man of a very uncommon character, very aged, very wealthy, and very generous! A man, who, with all the bodily infirmities of old age, was yet clear of all those which dishonour and deform the mind, in that season; equally superior to timorous caution, sordid avarice, and unsuited luxury: as will be further seen in the sequel of this history.

THE circumstances now related were all so many happy beginnings and omens of *David's* future success; and pledges of that just and humble confidence, which he had placed in the divine favour and protection. Let us leave him to all the consolation of these happy hopes, and return to *Absalom*.

WHEN *Absalom* had indulged his criminal commerce with his father's concubines (as the occasion and circumstances too strongly indicate) to satiety; a satiety, even in the lowest degree of guilt, confessedly dreadful; he proceeded to reward the merit, and hide the horrors, of his incest,

incest, in the pomp and splendor of a public coronation; and was accordingly solemnly anointed\* and crowned. And it is probable, that, by the time this affair was over, he found his forces strong enough to attempt upon his father. He gave the chief command of his army to *Amasa*, another of *David's* nephews, the son of his sister *Abigail*: and it is reasonable to believe, from the words of the text, that his forces were very numerous; for when the sacred historian informs us, that *Absalom passed over Jordan*, he adds, *he and all the men of Israel with him; and they pitched in the land of Gilead.*

WHEN *David* found himself sufficiently strong to go against the enemy, he resolved not to wait their coming, but give the assault; and accordingly marched his forces out of the city, under the three captains before-mentioned, declaring, that he himself also would go forth with them, and share their fate; which his people earnestly dissuaded him from; insisting, that he should stay behind, and, if occasion were, succour them from the city; for that their defeat, if they should fly, was of little consequence, whilst he was safe, whose single life was worth ten thousand of theirs. The king yielded to their affectionate intreaties; and I am persuaded, he did it with less reluctance, upon a reflection, that he must otherwise go against his own subjects, and draw his sword against a rebel son, whom he could not think

\* Sam. xix. 10.

of but with too much tenderness, in spite of all his crimes. And, as a proof of this, he, that moment, gave the kindest charge concerning him, to all his captains: *Deal gently, for my sake, with the young man—with Absalom.* He begs them to deal gently with that young man, as if all his faults were more those of his youth, than his nature. But at the same time, that his people could not but discern, in these words, the excess of his weakness for that profligate son; they could not but observe also, in them, a calm presage and assistance of their success against their enemies.

A BATTLE quickly ensued, and, I think, *Josephus's* account of it is the least rational and satisfactory that can well be imagined. He tells us, that *Joab* put his army in battle-array, over-against the enemy, in a great plain, with a wood behind him; and that the enemy were routed, and driven with great slaughter, through the forests and valleys.

Now, in the sacred writings, we hear but of one wood, in which they tell us the battle was fought; as also, that *David's* army marched out of the city, and gave the assault. This account is very short; but thus much I think we may fairly conclude from it, that *David* carefully concealed the number of his forces from the enemy; in all probability, to make them imagine him much weaker than in truth he was. And it is highly probable, that it was to this end also, that he divided his army into three bodies, under three several captains.

captains. Now, if we suppose two of these bodies carefully lodged and concealed in the sides of the wood of *Ephraim*, (where the battle was fought) and the third let out from the centre of it, (by *Joab*, for instance) against the enemy; and, upon the assault, retiring, and, as it were, driven back again by the enemy into the heart of the wood; and that then *David's* forces, who had lined the wood, started up from their cover, upon a signal given, and assaulted *Ab-salom's* army in flank on either side; nothing can be imagined more likely to throw them into the utmost confusion and consternation; and, of consequence, to gain *David* a complete victory. And, without some such supposition as this, it is scarcely to be imagined, how an universal battle should be fought in a wood; and how a less army could there destroy a greater; or how that greater could be driven through a wood, which, according to *Josephus's* account, lay at the back of their enemies. Nor indeed, in my apprehension, is the text intelligible, but upon some supposition of this kind; which tells us, literally, that *the people* (that is, *David's* forces) *went out into the field against Israel, and the battle was in the wood of Ephraim, where the people of Israel were slain before the servants of David.* Which plainly shews, that *David's* forces fought not to any effect, till they retreated into the wood; and there they exerted themselves with full vigour against their enemies; which is unimaginable, upon any other supposition, than that they there had them to  
more



more advantage; probably, from the ambushes there laid against them.

IN this general rout, *Absalom* fled amongst the rest, and was met by some of the servants of *David*; who revering the king's command, let him pass unhurt: yet he escaped not; for whom they would not arrest, the divine vengeance did: for, as he fled on his mule, *The mule*, says the text, *went under the thick boughs of a great oak, and his head caught hold of the oak, and he was taken up between the heaven and the earth, and the mule that was under him went away.*

IN this posture, one of *Joab's* soldiers saw him, and informed his general of what he saw, and was reproved by him for not dispatching the traitor, when he had him in his power; which if he had done, he would have given him ten shekels of silver, and a military girdle. To which the soldier replied, That, although he should give him a thousand shekels of silver, he would not disobey the king's command, issued, in his own hearing, to all his captains: and that, if he had disobeyed it, he should have acted a lye against his own life; for nothing was concealed from the king, and perhaps *Joab* himself would have been the first to inform him. At this, *Joab* turned from him in a chafe; and, taking three darts in his hand, *he thrust them*, says the text, *through the heart of Absalom, while he was yet alive in the midst of the oak; and ten young men, that bare Joab's armour, compassed about, and smote Absalom, and slew him.*

THIS

THIS done, *Joab* sounded a retreat, and put an end to the carnage of the enemy. And when the soldiers were all returned from the pursuit, they took down *Absalom* from the tree, threw him into a great pit in the wood, and laid a great heap of stones upon him. Stoning to death was the legal punishment of rebellion against parents; and therefore they, who could not chastise him living, for this sin, now branded him dead, as he deserved \*. It seems, having no son to continue his name, he had erected a monument to it, hewn out of the living rock, which he meant to be of perpetual duration, and may perhaps be so, (for it is still extant, and no despicable remain of antient architecture) if it be not buried in the stones thrown at it, in detestation of his memory, by all that pass by it. For now this work of vanity is become a memorial of reproach. Strange power of guilt, which can, in one moment, turn all the devices of vanity, all the memorials of excellence, all the securities of fame, into monuments of infamy.

THUS fell this cruel, this murderous, this incestuous parricide! and with him twenty thousand of his rebel adherents; some by the sword in battle, and in flight, (for they were scattered over the face of all the country) but more in the wood, being probably wedged to death between trees, trampled upon stumps,

\* And this, I apprehend, gave rise to the custom amongst us of throwing heaps of stones upon the graves of malefactors, altho' it was of earlier use among the *Jews*, Josh. vii. 26.

and tumbled into pit-falls, in the press and hurry of their flight; and some of them, perhaps, devoured by wild beasts, where they hoped to be concealed.

WHEN the battle was over, *Ahimaaz* begged to be made the messenger of this good success to the king; but *Joab*, who loved him, and knew how disagreeable the account of *Abjalom's* fate would be to *David*, refused to let him be the bearer of such unwelcome news. And, calling to one of his attendants, whose name was *Cushi*, bid him go and tell the king what he had seen. *And Cushi*, says the text, *bowed himself — and ran*. However, *Ahimaaz*, revolving *Joab's* reason for refusing to send him on that errand; and recollecting that he could distinguish between what was agreeable, and what was distasteful to the king, in the success of that day, begged to be permitted to run after *Cushi*; and *Joab* gave way to his importunity: and he, taking the advantage of an easier road, outran *Cushi*.

ONE of *David's* watchmen espied them speeding forward, and immediately informed the king; who hearing of one man coming alone, concluded him a messenger sent by *Joab*, with some account of the battle: and the watchman then calling out, That he saw another man running alone, the king concluded, that he also was sent with further news; and, upon the watchman's telling him, That he took the foremost to be *Ahimaaz*, the son of *Zadok*, the king said, *He is a good man, and bringeth good tidings*. And when *Ahimaaz* came within hearing, he cried



cried out, *All is well*: and coming up to the king, fell prostrate before him, and blessed God for the deliverance wrought in his favour against his rebel subjects. The king then eagerly inquiring, Whether *Absalom* were safe? *Abimaaz* answered, that when he came away, he saw a great tumult; but could not tell what it meant.

THE king, doubtless, apprehended the worst; and *Abimaaz's* dissimulation had this good effect, that it prepared him for it.

CUSHI came up soon after, and repeated the joyful tidings, that *Abimaaz* had brought. And, being also asked, If *Absalom* were safe? he answered with a wish, That all the king's enemies might *be as that young man*. The king could not stand the account; but immediately ran up to his chamber, to give vent to his distress: yet could not refrain from tears and lamentations, even till he got thither; but was heard crying out, as he went, *O my son Absalom! my son, my son Absalom!—Would God I had died for thee, O Absalom! my son, my son!*

THE king's command to spare *Absalom*, was indeed an extraordinary instance of mercy (equalled only in him, who, dying, prayed for his murderers); yet it is to be accounted for from his fatherly fondness, and the benignity of his nature. But there is something astonishing in this excess of grief for such a reprobate; and, I confess, it is, to me, utterly unaccountable, from any other principle, than the sad and shocking reflection, of his having died with all his sins upon his head; and gone down quick to perdition.



I CAN recollect but one man in all the accounts of antiquity, whose character will bear to be compared with *Absalom's*; and that is, *Cyrus* the younger.

CYRUS was allowed the completest, most accomplished man among the *Persians*, as *Absalom* among the *Israelites*. There is nothing particularly said of his beauty (except, that he had a great quantity of long hair): but as he is allowed the most majestic man among the *Persians*, after the elder *Cyrus*, who was remarkably beautiful; and as personal advantages always entered into the idea of a majestic man, in the earlier ages; it is probable, that *Cyrus* also excelled in these—They were both royally descended; both immoderately ambitious; both bent upon destroying their brothers, who stood in their way to the throne; and both laid trains to destroy them. *Cyrus* miscarried in his attempt; but *Absalom* succeeded in his. Both were pardoned these crimes, for which they deserved to die: and both no sooner pardoned, than they formed a design of rebellion against the persons who forgave them; which they carried on by a long train of practised popularity, calumny, and dissimulation. And, to conclude, they both died in rebellion, and in battle; the one against his father, the other against his brother: and both died childless, at least without heirs to continue their name. Here indeed they differed: *Artaxerxes* insulted the remains of his rebellious brother. *David* lamented the death of his rebellious son.

## C H A P. XIII.

DAVID, *grieving to Excess, is reprov'd by Joab. and brought to appear in public. Measures are concerted with Zadok and Abiathar, for his Restoration. The King returns to his Capital.*

WHEN *David's* army perceived his affliction, they considered themselves, as a kind of criminals, who had contravened the king's command, and were, upon that score, in disgrace with him : and for that reason they stole back to the city in silence ; as men, not less ashamed of the battle they had won, than if they had fled from their enemies : by which means the victory of that day was *turned into mourning, unto all the people.*

WHEN *Joab* returned from the field, and saw the king abandoned to grief, and lamenting his son in a most distressful manner ; the people also disconsolate, hanging down their heads, and hiding themselves ; he broke in upon the king, without any previous form or reserve ; and, giving a full loose to the impetuosity of his nature, fiercely reproached him with a most unkind and unbecoming behaviour to a brave army, who had just saved him and his family from destruction ; and yet were treated as so many cowards and traitors ; and a rebellious, reprobate son, so far preferred to all their united merits,

merits, that he was well satisfied, that if all they had perished in their duty, and that single son survived, it had been matter of joy to their sovereign. He then added a furious threat, and confirmed it by a solemn oath, by the living God, that if he did not instantly quit his apartment, appear in public, and treat his people as they deserved, they would that moment desert him, as one man; which would be far worse than all the calamities that had hitherto befallen him.

THE king, however offended by this rough treatment, and offensive truth, nevertheless, thought fit to dissemble his resentment for the present; and immediately left his chamber, and went to the gate, the seat of public justice, where he gave audience to the people: who immediately resorted thither in crouds to him; and were received, and treated by him, as they deserved; or rather, as well as his present distress would allow.

DAVID, now victorious over a rebel army, totally ruined and routed, had it fully in his power to take ample revenge of all those, whose treachery and infidelity (which had so lately brought him to the brink of ruin) well deserved to be severely chastised. And it is evident, that if he had had any thing revengeful or sanguinary in his nature, he could now want no pretext, either of justice or policy, to indulge it to the full: but he was governed by very different principles; and saw the whole affair of his son's rebellion, and his own conquest, in another light,

light. He knew the first to be the effect of his guilt; and the last the fruit of his penitence and humiliation before GOD; and therefore made no other change in his conduct, than from prayer and penitence, to gratitude and thanksgiving, and a patient humble expectation of his providential disposal of the event. Nor did he fail of his reward; for now it seemed good to the great Governor of the world, who at his pleasure *stilleth the raging of the sea, and the madness of the people*, to turn the hearts of *David's* subjects, as it were, in one instant, in his favour; insomuch that they now returned to their duty, with as much eager zeal, as they had, but a few days before, rushed into rebellion against him. And now their only contention was, which of their tribes should most signalize their loyalty and affection for their sovereign. They now recollected the many deliverances from their enemies, wrought for them by his hand; and could not but find it an ill return for those blessings, to drive him out of his kingdom. They reflected, that the man, in whose favour they rebelled, was dead; and what could they now do better than return to their duty, and reinstate their lawful sovereign on his throne? The only question was, how they should go to work, and where they should begin. Things do not easily fall into their antient and true order, after so much tumult and confusion, as was now spread through the land; and *David* rightly judged, that it required the skill and address of some men of wisdom, and weight with the people,



to set things right, and conduct them in their natural course: and accordingly he chose *Zadok* and *Abiathar*, the priests, to be his agents in the affair; and advised them to apply themselves, first, to the tribe of *Judah*; and to reprove their delay and inactivity in taking proper measures for bringing the king back; especially when they knew, that all the other tribes were intent upon his restoration, and had given him strong assurances to that purpose. And, to influence them more effectually, the king added this kind message to them, from his own mouth: *Ye are my brethren, ye are my bones, and my flesh: Wherefore then are ye the last to bring back the king?*—And forasmuch as *Joab's* credit with the army had for a long time been insupportable to *David*; had formerly protected him under the guilt of *Abner's* murder, and lately under an avowed contempt of his sovereign's commands; *David* judged this a fit opportunity of humbling his insolence, and repressing his power, by placing *Amasa* at the head of his forces: and accordingly he sent him a kind message, to remind him of his near relation to his prince, and to assure him of the supreme command in the army, if he returned to his duty. This kind treatment of that rebel, captain of the hostile host, and all his rebel adherents, had all the effect that he could hope for; it touched their hearts, and melted them into loyalty and affection; and they immediately deputed the heads of their tribe to wait upon the king, and invite him to return; and he immediately complied

with their request, and began his progress to the river *Jordan*; and had not gone far, before the principal persons of his whole tribe met him, in a body, to conduct him over the river. *Shimei* also, the *Benjamite*, who had so lately reviled and cursed the king, now waited upon him, attended by a thousand men of his tribe; and, falling down at *David's* feet, confessed his guilt, and his perverseness, and implored forgiveness; adding, with a very refined address, *Thy servant doth know, that I have sinned: therefore, behold I am come the first, this day, of all the house of Joseph, to go down to meet my lord the king.*

HE very well knew, that a *Benjamite*, of the family of *Saul*, came but ill recommended to *David*, under that character; and therefore he would not denominate himself from *Benjamin*, but from *Joseph*, his beloved brother. *Abishai*, who had before so highly resented his vile treatment of *David*, thought this a fit season for wreaking his revenge; and accordingly reminded the king of *Shimei's* insolence, in hopes of his permission to chastise it; which *David* refused with indignation, and a reproof, becoming a great king: *What have I to do with you, ye sons of Zeruiah, that ye should this day be adversaries to me?* (Was this the duty of their relation, to act the part of his worst enemies?) *Shall any man be put to death this day in Israel? I know that I am this day king over Israel.* Should the day of his reconciliation to his people be blemished with blood? He knew himself a king, not of one party, but of his whole people; and there-

fore wisely resolved, that his fatherly affection should extend to them all. He knew himself a sovereign, and he knew, that mercy and forgiveness were the noblest privileges of sovereignty. And, when he had signified this, he turned to *Shimei*, pronounced his pardon, and confirmed it with an oath, that he should not die.

WITH *Shimei* went *Ziba* also, the slanderer of *Mephibosheth*, with his fifteen sons, and twenty servants, to meet, and to do obeisance to the king, and conduct him over the river: to which purpose the people of *Judah* prepared a boat, which first carried over the king's household, and then returned to carry over the king: and with him, his aged and faithful friend *Barzillai*, the *Gileadite*; who had so generously, and so amply, provided for his sustenance, while he lay at *Mahanaim*. The king, unwilling to be outdone in generosity, would fain have prevailed upon him to go with him to *Jerusalem*, and allow him to take care of him there, for the rest of his life; that he might have continual opportunities of expressing his gratitude, and repaying what he owed him: but *Barzillai*, in a spirit of true wisdom, and becoming moderation, declined this generous offer. The pleasures of a court had no charms for him, in that advanced age: he was then fourscore years old; his senses and appetites were long since palled, and both music and banquets had lost all their relish. He therefore begged the king to give him leave to wait upon him over the river, and then return to his own city; there to die in peace, and be  
laid



*laid in the grave of his father and his mother.* But, if his majesty pleased, he might take his son *Chimham* with him, and deal with him as he thought proper. The king readily consented to take the young man with him, promised to provide for him, and assured *Barzillai*, he would do every thing else he desired. And, when the old man had conducted *David* as far as he proposed, the king took his last leave of him; kissed and blessed him, and suffered him to return to his own home; but took *Chimham* with him to *Jerusalem*; whither he was conducted by his own forces, and the chiefs of the tribe of *Judah*; and was now restored to his capital, with as much pomp, magnificence, and general joy, as he had lately been driven from it, with grief, dejection, and distress.

## CH A P. XIV.

*A Contest arises between the Tribes about restoring the king: A Rebellion ensues: Amasa is commanded by DAVID to quell it, but murdered by Joab: Sheba the Leader of the Rebellion takes Refuge in Abel-Maacah, where he is besieged by Joab. A wise Matron interceeds for the City.*

THE joy of *David's* restoration was not however without its alloy: it seems, the people of *Judah* had taken their resolution



of restoring the king, without taking advice, or concerting any measures, with the other tribes, upon that head; and accordingly having fixed upon *Gilgal*, on this side *Jordan*, for the place of their meeting, they assembled themselves there, on the day appointed; passed the river, and waited in a body upon the king; and conducted him back over the river, as far as *Gilgal*, in conjunction with half the people of *Israel*; probably made up of those *Israelites* who first joined him at *Mahanaim*, and those who were afterwards deputed by the tribes to invite him home.

AT *Gilgal* they were met by the other half of the *Israelites*, who also intended to have crossed the river, and paid their duty to the king; but, finding that the tribe of *Judah* were beforehand with them, they resented the slight put upon them; and, being joined and supported in their resentments by the rest of their brethren, who had re-conducted the king, in conjunction with *Judah*, they all, with one voice, warmly expostulated with the king upon it; demanded why their brethren, the men of *Judah*, had stolen him away, and brought the king and his household over *Jordan*, without advice first had with them? To which the men of *Judah* answered, That as the king was of their tribe, their brethren of *Israel* had no reason to resent their warmer zeal in his favour; that, for the rest, they had acted from no selfish or mercenary views; that they had received no gratuity from him, nor so much as eaten  
of

of his meat. The *Israelites* replied, that they had ten parts in the king, and consequently more right to be consulted, upon a point of so much consequence.

THIS was a natural contest between greater power, and nearer relation; both claim a preference, which both cannot have; and which those of nearer relation should have yielded, both in point of prudence, and affection for their friend, which the men of *Judah* did not. In all disputes it is natural for the party injured, to be more angry; and therefore they who are in the wrong often assume that character, by supplying from passion, whatever is wanting to them, in point of reason and argument, as the tribe of *Judah* did now; for the text informs us, *that the words of the men of Judah were fiercer than the words of the men of Israel.* This naturally inflamed the contention, and it soon grew so hot, that *Sheba* the son of *Bichri*, a *Benjamite*, took the advantage of it, to kindle a new flame in the nation. He blew the trumpet, and cried out, *We have no part in David, neither have we any inheritance in the son of Jesse—Every man to his tent, O Israel.* Upon this the men of *Israel* ran again into rebellion, forsook their king and followed *Sheba*; but the tribe of *Judah* clave to him, and attended him from *Jordan* to *Jerusalem*.

WHEN he entered the city, poor *Mephibosheth* came to meet him, with all the ensigns of forlorn distress, both in his garb and per-

son; for he had utterly neglected both, from the day the king was driven from his capital. Far from acting the part of a plotter against his sovereign, his concern for him was manifested by all the marks of a sincere, undissembled affliction; estranged not only from joy, but even from indulgence in the common conveniences of life: his beard was untrimmed, his cloaths unwashed, and his poor infirm feet undressed, that whole time. *David* called to him, and asked him, Why he had not attended him at his departure from *Jerusalem*? To which that upright, open-hearted son of *Jonathan* answered; *My lord, O king, my servant deceived me; for thy servant said, I will saddle me an ass, that I may ride thereon, and go to the king, because thy servant is lame*—Here his grief (or rather a righteous indignation to find himself traduced and suspected) choaked his words, and broke the chain of his discourse. And it was with difficulty he seems to have added, — *and he hath slandered thy servant unto my lord the king. But my lord the king is as an angel of God; do therefore what is good in thine eyes. For all my father's house were but dead men before my lord the king; yet didst thou set thy servant among them that did eat at thine own table: What right therefore have I yet to cry any more unto the king?*

*And the king said unto him, Why speakest thou any more of thy matters? I have said, thou and Ziba divide the land.*



THE reader will easily perceive, from this answer of *David*, that he saw *Mephibosheth's* innocence, (and found himself upbraided by it) and the error of his own former credulity, and therefore could not bear to hear of it: but he had now no time to discuss the matter more fully; and therefore all that he could do, for the present, was, to restore him to his estate, and leave both him, and his accuser, in their former condition, till he could inquire further. However *Ziba* might have been faulty towards *Mephibosheth*, he had been signally faithful and useful to *David*; and to condemn him unheard, as he had *Mephibosheth*, were to run the risque of a second rash decision; a decision that might be now as unseasonable as rash, whilst another rebellion subsisted in his dominions.

THE antient way of tenancy (nor is it yet quite disused) was that of occupying the land, and giving the proprietor a certain annual portion of the fruits of it. When the tenant paid one half of the annual produce, he was called *Colonus partiarius*; and such, in the judgment of the best critics\*, was *Ziba* to *Mephibosheth*, as he had been before to *Saul*. So that *Ziba*, having half the fruits for his labour, had, in effect, half the land. Upon *Ziba's* misinformation, the whole was given to him; so that he was then both proprietor and usufructuary. *David* now revokes that grant, and restores his first decree by these words; *I have said, thou and*

\* See Trapp, Grotius, Selden.



*Ziba divide the land* \*. To which *Mephibosheth* answered, in all the generosity and fidelity of his father's friendship; *Yea, let him take all, inasmuch as my lord the king is come again in peace unto his own house.* He had no solicitude for the recovery of his estate, of which calumny had robbed him: his concern was, to recover his credit with the king. That once established, he was contented and happy. The generous *Mephibosheth* said to himself, what *Seneca* said (and what it was much easier for a cold uninterested *Stoic* to say) to a friend in affliction; That he had no right to complain, as long as his prince was in safety. This upright and generous conduct of *Mephibosheth* could not, I think, fail to restore him intirely to *David's* former friendship and affection; and, if possible, to more credit, and greater confidence. And I have not the least doubt, but he continued in it to the day of *David's* death. And, I think, I am warranted to say so, from the text, 2 *Sam.* ix. 13. for, had this commerce ceased for a series of years, I have some doubt whether the sacred historian could be justified, in assuring us, as he there does, without any subsequent hint to the contrary, that *he did eat continually at the king's table.*

\* These words plainly refer to a former decree, now re-established. That could not be the decree in favour of *Ziba*; for there the whole was given to him: they must therefore refer to the first decree, whereby *Saul's* estate was divided between *Mephibosheth* as proprietor, and *Ziba* as usufructuary. And therefore the *Rabbins* talk idly, who imagine that *David's* kingdom was divided under his grandson, on account of the unjust division of *Saul's* estate between *Ziba* and *Mephibosheth*.

THAT he was perfectly restored to *David's* friendship, is not, I flatter myself, irrational to conclude, from the thirty-seventh *Psalms*; which, I am persuaded, was written for *Mephibosheth's* consolation under *Ziba's* calumny.

THAT most, if not all the *Psalms*, were written upon particular occasions, is not, I think, to be doubted; although the precepts, praises, exhortations, and monitions contained in them, are, at the same time, calculated for general and perpetual use.

THAT this *Psalms* was particularly written for the consolation of some righteous man, oppressed by calumny, against whom some wicked wretch had laid schemes to destroy him, is clear from the whole tenour of it\*. And who, and what, is there in the whole history of *David*, to whom, and to which, it can refer, but to *Mephibosheth*, calumniated, and villainously wronged, by *Ziba*?

BUT here it may be asked, Why *David*, if he believed *Mephibosheth* innocent, did not bring the matter to a fair trial? I answer, That a man of *Ziba's* subtilty, who had laid so heavy an accusation against *Mephibosheth*, had undoubtedly laid his trains and schemes to make it good: and therefore *David*, in all probability, was afraid to bring the matter to a public trial, lest his friend's innocence should be oppressed by false accusations; and in the event, whether he were

\* *Delight thou in the Lord, and he shall give thee thy heart's desire—He shall make thy righteousness as clear as the light, and thy just dealing as the noon-day.*

acquitted or condemned, the bare bringing him to tryal could not fail to be matter of sufficient calumny against *David*; and therefore nothing could better become *David*, in this situation, than to waive the trial, and exhort *Mephibosheth* to refer the matter wholly to the arbitration of unerring wisdom and justice: which would not fail finally to vindicate innocence, and avenge falshood and villainy. And this is, evidently, the main scope and purpose of this *Psalms*. And that every part of it may very naturally relate to *Mephibosheth*, will appear from two or three easy and natural suppositions (to which no thinking man can refuse a ready and a rational assent); which, I hope, will clear this matter to the reader's satisfaction.

LET us then suppose, that so wicked a man as *Ziba*, who had the entire management of his master's affairs, made no scruple to enrich himself by his spoils: and let us suppose, that, upon this discovery of his villainy, *Mephibosheth*, who before confided in him, (as an old faithful servant to the family) and left every thing to his management, looked now more narrowly into his own affairs; and found himself not only calumniated by his steward, but spoiled likewise, and impoverished; his steward rich, and flourishing in a numerous family; himself poor, and but with one son.

Now nothing is more natural, than to suppose the generous and upright heart of *Mephibosheth* distressed, sunk, and uneasy to the last degree, in this situation; and taking rash and



repining resolutions, to banish himself from a country where he had found such treatment; and so put himself out of the power of calumny for the future. And what could be more natural, and more consoling, under these circumstances, than for *David* to beg of him to forego those rash resolutions; to admonish him, that if he bore his present low estate with patience, and resignation to the divine will, he should soon see it bettered; to mind him, that the prosperity of the wicked was short and transient; that he himself had observed them flourishing like a green bay-tree, with a thousand rich suckers rising from its roots; yet their duration was short, and their end destruction; that, on the contrary, the righteous are the immediate care of Divine providence, which would not fail to support and deliver them from their enemies; to assure him at the same time, of his own intire satisfaction in his innocence, and steady continuance of his friendship to him, in every exigency; and in what words could all this be conveyed more strongly, than in the several following passages of this *Psalm*? *Fret not thyself because of the ungodly; for they shall soon be cut down like the grass. Delight thou in the Lord, and he shall give thee thy heart's desire. He shall make thy righteousness as clear as the light, and thy just dealing as the noon-day. A small thing that the righteous hath, is better than great riches of the ungodly. Hope thou in the Lord, and keep his way, and he shall promote thee, that thou shalt possess the land: when the ungodly shall perish, thou shalt*



*shalt see it. The meek-spirited shall possess the earth, and shall be refreshed in the multitude of peace. Put thou thy trust in the Lord, and be doing good—Dwell in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed—Leave off wrath, and let go displeasure: fret not thyself, else shalt thou be moved to do evil—The Lord knoweth the days of the godly, and their inheritance shall endure for ever\*.—They shall not be confounded in the perilous time, and in the days of dearth† they shall have enough.*

SUPPOSE these *David's* consolations to *Mephibosheth*, under the circumstances now laid down, and suppose the last-cited verse his own declaration in favour of him (and imagination can apply them to none other, that we know of); what can they mean less, than an exhortation to faith, trust, and confidence in GOD, strengthened with the king's own declaration, that he was determined to support *Mephibosheth* in every danger; and to share with him, to his last morsel of bread?

THE sacred historian next informs us, That, when *David* came to his house at *Jerusalem*, he took the ten women, whom he had left to keep the house, and put them in ward, and fed them, but went not in unto them: so they were shut up, to the day of their death, living in widowhood.

\* Accordingly we find the descendants of *Mephibosheth* remarkably numerous, 1 *Chron.* viii.

† This passage seems to fix the æra of this *Psalms*, that it was written in the days of the public famine.

THIS done, his first care was to look after *Sheba*, and crush this rebellion in its infancy: to which purpose, finding this a fit occasion to rid himself of *Joab's* insupportable insolence, he commanded *Amasa* (whose credit with the soldiery could only counterbalance that of *Joab*) to assemble an army with all possible dispatch, and pursue him.

THAT *David* now deposed *Joab* from the supreme command of the army, and put *Amasa*, according to promise, in his place, appears evidently, from this command, which he gave *Amasa* upon his return to *Jerusalem*, to assemble the whole tribe of *Judah* there, within the space of three days, in order to crush the rebellion. *Amasa* went immediately about it; but made not such dispatch as *David* directed, but outstayed the time appointed. This gave the king great disquiet, and filled him with apprehensions, that this delay might suffer *Sheba's* rebellion to grow up into something worse than *Absalom's*. To prevent which, he ordered *Abishai* to take his own life-guard, and such other forces as were at hand, and instantly pursue that rebel. Accordingly, *Abishai* immediately assembled the *Cherethites* and *Pelethites*, and another body of forces, called *Joab's* men, and all the mighty men of war, (whom I take to be *David's* worthies of their several orders) and went in pursuit of *Sheba*: and by the time he had reached the great stone at *Gibeon*, about two leagues northward from *Jerusalem*, *Amasa* met them with such forces as he had gathered, and  
put

put himself at the head of the army. *Joab*, seeing him there, was filled with rage and indignation; yet dissembled it so well, that he went up, as others did, to pay his respects to him; and, as he walked up to him, his sword (whether by chance or design) hung from his belt in such a manner, that it dropped out of the sheath: *Joab* took it up, and, approaching *Amasa* (who perceived not what was in his hand) in all the civility of a friendly salutation, took him by the beard, and at the same time stabbed him under the fifth rib, with such a furious thrust, that his bowels gushed out, and he fell to the ground. This done, *Joab*, without taking the least notice of what had passed, put himself immediately in *Amasa's* place; and, with his brother *Abishai*, pursued after *Sheba*; whilst one of his soldiers stood by *Amasa's* corpse, and called out to the forces, as they came up, That all those that favoured *Joab*, and were for *David*, should follow *Joab*.

THE men, as they came up, seeing *Amasa* wallowing in his blood, were struck with horror at the sight, and stood still, gazing at it; which he who was directed to attend it observing, removed the corpse from the high road, into an adjacent field; and, casting a cloth over it, hid the sad spectacle from the eyes of the soldiers. Which done, the people, without any further delay, followed *Joab* in pursuit of *Sheba*; who had passed through all the tribes with all the dispatch he could, exciting them to rebellion where-ever he went; but at length, finding him-  
self



self hotly pursued, he took shelter in *Abel-machah*, a city between *Libanus* and *Antilibanus*, north of *Hamajcus*. There all the *Berites* (probably the inhabitants of *Beeroth*, who were *Benjamites*) joined and supported him. *Joab* immediately laid siege to the city; and from the accounts we have of his digging a trench around it, and battering the walls, critics have, I think, fairly concluded, that the science of besieging cities with lines of circumvallation and contravallation, (as they call them) and battering-engines, was much older than any account left us of this practice, in the history of the heathen world; although *Herodotus*, lib. i. gives *Harpagus*, *Cyrus's* general, the credit of having invented the lines now mentioned, and taken the city of *Phocæa*, in *Ionia*, (the first city so taken) by that invention; whereas the sacred writer speaks of one of those lines, on occasion of the siege of *Abel*, as of a thing familiar, and well known to his readers.

As *Joab* pressed the siege with all earnestness and dispatch, a wise woman, from within, called out, over the walls, and desired to speak with him, in all the modesty and decency of language then in use. And, prefacing what she had to say, with a short account of the reputation of wisdom, in which that city antiently stood, she covertly (as the text is generally understood) expostulated with him, upon the iniquity of going about to destroy an antient and venerable city of his nation, without first proposing terms of submission to it; and offering peace upon



acceptance of those terms, as the law of GOD expressly directed to be done, even to an hostile and heathen city (*Deut. xx.*). She urges, that her city was *faithful* and *peaceable in Israel*: Upon what pretence then could he engage in destroying a city of that character? Was not this to destroy a mother city in *Israel*, and to swallow up the inheritance of the LORD? Her speech seems marked with all the characters of wisdom; close, and clear, and cogent; singularly emphatical, and moving; and such as well supported the reputation of her city.

IT is scarcely to be supposed, that she undertook this parley otherwise than in concert with the rulers of this city. And if so, nothing surely could be managed with more address, than their chusing out a wise and venerable matron to plead their cause. In the first place, her sex and character intitled her to attention and respect, which, possibly, could not so well be secured to any rebel of the other sex, with a man of *Joab's* rough and haughty spirit. In the next place, they knew, that antient and honourable cities were wont to be considered under the characters of matrons, revered for virtue, and a numerous well-educated offspring (and this way of speaking is familiar to all languages): Who then could be so proper a representative of a city in distress, as a complaining matron\*? This our venerable female advocate well understood; and therefore

\* Both cities and countries, in distress, are frequently represented under the character of complaining matrons; both in the writings and medals of the antients.

addresses all she had to say, in the person and style of her city: *I, peaceable and faithful in Israel—Thou seekest to destroy a city, and a mother in Israel—Why wilt thou swallow up the inheritance of the Lord?* Upon which Joab, struck with the horror of such imputed cruelty, eagerly cries out—*Far be it, far be it from me, that I should swallow up, or destroy*—He then added, that all he proposed was, to chastise a rebel, *Sheba* the son of *Bichri*, who had taken sanctuary in that city; and that, if he were delivered up, the siege should immediately cease, and the city be left unmolested. Upon the receipt of this answer, the matron went, *in her wisdom*, (says the text) and laid the matter so effectually before her people, that, to clear themselves from the imputation of rebellion, they did more even than *Joab* desired: they immediately ordered *Sheba's* head to be cut off, and thrown over the wall, to *Joab*; who, upon seeing it, commanded a retreat to be sounded that instant, quitted the city, dismissed his people to their several homes, and returned to *Jerusalem*, to the king; and returned with the weight of so much merit and popularity, as effectually covered his murder of *Amasa* from all attempts of inquiry or chastisement. *The crime* (as *Florus* expresses it) *was within the glory*: and not only so, but reinstated him, likewise, in the supreme command over the army.

THUS did it seem good to the Divine Wisdom, to permit *Joab's* unruly ambition, and impetuous cruelty; at one time, separate from all

sense of duty, and, at another joined to it, to punish the guilt of four notorious rebels\*, in succession, with dreadful deaths! two of them, indeed, treacherous and sudden; but all, in the retributions of Providence, judicial, and just.

HERE ended *Absalom's* rebellion, and *Sheba's*, which rose from the ruins of it: but the contest between the tribes, which occasioned it, was not, we may well imagine, yet intirely laid: and therefore *David*, as I apprehend, wrote and published the hundred and thirty-third *Psalms* about this time, to compose it. It is one of the shortest of all his works, and consists but of four verses†: yet, short as it is, contains an exhortation to unity, beginning in the prince, and diffused through the people, illustrated by two images, the most apt and beautiful that ever were imagined. Kingdoms are considered as bodies politic, of which the king is the head, and the people, in their several ranks and orders, the parts and members. A spirit of union beginning upon the prince, whose person is sacred, is like oil poured upon the head of *Aaron*, which naturally descends, and spreads itself over all the parts of the body, and diffuses

\* Abner, Absalom, Amasa, and Sheba.

† *Behold how good and joyful a thing it is for brethren to dwell together in unity.*

2. *It is like the precious ointment upon the head, that ran down unto the beard, even unto Aaron's beard, and went down to the skirts of his cloathing.*

3. *Like as the dew of Hermon, which fell upon the hill of Zion.*

4. *For there the Lord promised his blessing, and life for evermore.*

beauty and fragrance over the whole, reaching even to the skirts of the garment. Oil is, without question, the finest emblem of union that ever was conceived! It is a substance consisting of very small parts, which yet by their mutual adhesion, constitute one uniform, well united, and useful body. The sacred oil carries the idea, and the advantage of union, yet further; which, being extracted from various spices, yet made up one well cohering and more valuable compound. The next image carries the exhortation to union, and the advantages of it, yet higher.

HERMON was the general name of one mountain, comprehending many lesser and lower hills, under the 'surround of a greater. Union, in any nation, is the gift of GOD; and therefore unity among brethren, beginning from the king, is like the dew of heaven, which, falling first upon the higher summit of *Hermon*, (refreshing, and enriching, where-ever it falls) naturally descends to *Sion*, a lower; and thence, even to the humble valleys.

SION was the centre of union to all the tribes: there GOD himself had promised his people rest, and peace from their enemies; which, however, were of little value without union and harmony among themselves.



## C H A P. XV.

*Judea is visited with a Famine. The Cause of the Divine Wrath. The Means and Method appointed to appease it. Mr. Chubb's Charge against DAVID, upon this Head, considered and refuted.*

ABOUT this time there arose a famine in *Judea*, which continued three years. It is very possible, that, for the first year, *David* might have ascribed this calamity to *Absalom's* rebellion; which, by diverting the people from their wonted industry, and cutting off many of their labouring hands, left the country for some time uncultivated: the natural consequence of which was, a scarcity of corn. But as this rebellion was of short continuance, and the famine far outlasted all the natural effects of it, *David* could not long hesitate, to ascribe it to some other cause. But however, as he had, in the true spirit of a provident ruler, erected granaries and store-houses, for provisions of all kinds, in all parts of his dominions\*, and, by that means made ample provision for the sustenance of his people, in any exigence that shou'd arise; he

\* This appears clearly from 1 *Chron.* xxvii. 25. *And over the store-houses in the fields, in the cities, and in the villages, and in the castles, was Jehonathan, &c.*

was the better enabled to bear this misfortune with equanimity, and intire resignation to the All-ruling Will. And accordingly, whatever remedies or reliefs he might have sought for from natural causes, and private and public prayers to Almighty GOD, he made no application for the extraordinary aid and interposition of Providence, till the third year: but in the third year, being well convinced, that the visitation was judicial, he applied himself to the sacred oracle of GOD, to learn the cause of this extraordinary and continued calamity; and was answered, That it was *for Saul, and his bloody house, because he slew the Gibeonites.*

THE history of the *Gibeonites* is well known: they were a remnant of the *Amorites* (that abandoned race, whom GOD, for their insufferable abominations, had devored to destruction); who, though they obtained a league for their lives and properties from the children of *Israel* by fraud; yet, forasmuch as *Joshua* and the elders had confirmed it by oath, they thought themselves bound to keep it; only tying them down to the servitude of supplying the tabernacle with wood and water for the public sacrifices, and service of those who attended upon them.

THIS unhappy people, notwithstanding it is agreed, on all hands, (from the tradition of the *Jews*) that they had renounced their idolatry, and performed the other conditions of their covenant, *Saul* sought all occasions to destroy: and did so, to such a degree of guilt, as drew down the divine judgment upon the land.

WHEN *David* had learned the true cause of the public calamity, under which the land laboured, and had been directed (as *Josephus* informs us) to refer himself to the *Gibeonites*, for the measures that should be taken to expiate the guilt; he immediately sent for that afflicted people; and asked them — *What shall I do for you? And wherewith shall I make the atonement, that ye may bless the inheritance of the Lord?*

To this they answered, that they desired no reparation of private damages, or revenge of injuries; all they required was, that a public sacrifice should be made to justice, and the divine vengeance inflicted upon the land. *David* then, pursuant to the instructions which he had received from GOD, desired to be informed by them, what they would have done upon that occasion. To which they replied, *The man that consumed us, and that devised against us, that we should be destroyed from remaining in any of the coasts of Israel, let seven men of his sons be delivered unto us, and we will hang them up unto the Lord, in Gibeah of Saul, whom the Lord did choose. And the king said, I will give them. But the king spared Mephibosheth, the son of Jonathan, the son of Saul, because of the Lord's oath that was between them, between David and Jonathan the son of Saul. But the king took the two sons of Rispah, the daughter of Aiah, whom she gave unto Saul, Armoni and Mephibosheth, and the five sons of Michael the daughter of Saul, whom she brought*

brought up\* for *Adriel, the son of Barzillai the Meolothite. And he delivered them into the hands of the Gibeonites, and they hanged them in the hill before the Lord: and they fell all seven together, and were put to death in the days of harvest.* There is no question but they chose to have this execution in *Gibeah of Saul*, for the reasons assigned by *Dr. Patrick*; to make the punishment the more remarkable and shameful; this being the city wherein he lived, both before and after he was king. But why these seven were marked out, as victims to the divine vengeance, is not so easy to say.

THE text immediately adds, that this was *the beginning of the barley harvest*, viz. about *March*; so that the sacrifice was made in the beginning of the third year, and the sacred historian informs us, that they continued hanging in that condition, (a public monument of terror to guilt in the highest rank of men) *until water dropped upon them from heaven*: that is, until God gave manifest tokens of his reconciliation, by sending gracious showers to refresh the land: which, in the opinion of the *Hebrew* doctors, was not until the ensuing *October*: an opinion well warranted by the text; which gives us to under-

\* In the original it is *bore*: Thus *Agamemnon* and *Menelaus*, though the children of *Plisthenes*, are (as *Eusebius* observes) called the sons of *Atreus*, who educated them; and *Ruth's* child is called a *son born to Naomi*, who nursed it (*Ruth* iv): as if education and nurture gave a right of parentage in the estimation of the antients.



stand, that the bodies hung there till the flesh fell from the bones\*.

COMMENTATORS have justly observed from hence, that the hanging of these carcases, for so long a time, in the open air, could not be in consequence of any command from *David*; because it was an open violation of the law of God, *Deut. xxi. 22, 23.* which commanded, that the carcases of all those who were hanged, should not remain even one night upon the tree; but should by all means be buried on the very day of execution. And the reason of the law, *viz. Lest the land be defiled*, held strong in the present case; inasmuch as the stench of so many carcases, for so long a time, in a malignant drought, and in the very hottest season of the year, might have added a pestilence to the famine: a danger, which it is impossible to imagine *David* would deliberately devise, both against his people and himself; and consequently demonstrates itself imposed upon him by a superior power: confuting all the little cavils of mean men, against the conduct of *David*, upon this occasion; cavils, which are further confuted by the account left us of *Rizpah's* singular affection for these unhappy victims. She spread a tent upon the rock on which they were executed, and kept a continual watch over their remains, night and day; *and suffered neither the birds of the air to rest on them by day, nor the beasts of the field by night.* Which when *David*

\* 2 Sam. xxi. 13. *And they gathered the bones of them that were hanged.*

heard, did he resent this conduct, which might have been a natural means of propagating a pestilence? Quite otherwise : it sufficiently appears from his subsequent behaviour, that he rather emulated it ; for he immediately went to *Jabesh Gilead*, and caused the bones of *Saul* and *Jonathan* to be removed from thence, and deposited, together with the bones of *Saul's* seven sons, now executed, in the sepulchre of *Kish* ; himself attending them in person to the grave : as if *Rizpah's* kindness to the remains of these unhappy victims reproached his own long neglect of doing due honour to those of so excellent a man, and so valuable a friend, as *Jonathan*.

THE sacred historian adds—*And they performed all that the king commanded; and after that God was intreated for the land.* This plainly implies, that GOD gave no signs of being appeased, until after the performance of these funeral rites : which grounds a rational belief, that these offices of humanity to the remains of the dead are highly acceptable in the sight of GOD. And perhaps this very instance gave rise to the religion of this duty in the heathen world.

ANOTHER inference is also obvious from this account of GOD's being intreated for the land, after the discharge of those offices to the dead ; *viz.* that public devotions had been appointed before this, to appease the wrath of GOD, but proved ineffectual. The same thing is also evident from *Psalms* lxxv. agreed on all hands to have been composed upon the ceasing of this calamity, *ver. 1. Praise waiteth for thee,*  
O God,

*O God, in Sion, and unto thee shall the vow be performed.*

A COMPLETE comment upon this sacred hymn is not the work either of my province or genius; and therefore I shall only observe, that the five last verses of it are the most rapturous, truly poetic, and natural image of joy, that imagination can form, or comprehend.

THE reader of taste will see this, in the simplest translation, *ver. 9, &c.* *Thou hast visited the earth, thou madest it to covet, and hast enriched it. The river of God is full of water. Thou shalt provide them corn, because thou hast prepared for it. Saturate \* the furrows thereof, make them sink with showers: melt it — bless its springing buds — Thou hast crowned the year with thy goodness, and thy orbs shall drop down fatness; the pastures of the wilderness shall drop: the hills shall exult, and be girded with gladness — The fields have cloathed themselves with cattle, the valleys have covered themselves with corn. They shall shout, yea, they shall sing.*

THE reader will easily observe, that when the divine poet had seen the showers falling from heaven, and the *Jordan* overflowing his banks, all the consequent blessings were that moment present to his quick poetic sight, and he paints them accordingly.

BUT we must quit this pleasing scene, and divert to something as thoroughly distasteful and disagreeable, as this is delightful: for I am now

\* In Hebrew, *Make them drunk.*

called upon, in justice to my subject, to inform the reader, that *David's* character, not only as an hero, but as a man of honour, and common honesty, is violently assaulted by one \* *Thomas Chubb* †, who imputes the death of *Saul's* descendants, procured by the *Gibeonites*, not to any command of GOD, but to a *plausible pretext* of *David's*, pretending such command, to get rid of *Saul's* posterity, his rivals in empire; blasting *David*, at once, with the complicated imputation of the basest of lyars, hypocrites, and murderers! Murder of that family which he had twice ‡ solemnly sworn not to destroy; and this, at the very time, when the hand of GOD was heavy upon him and his people! Murder of that family, whose murderers he detested and destroyed!

THE sum of Mr. *Chubb's* reasoning upon the point stands thus:

It is inconsistent with equity, and with GOD's own declarations, to punish one man, and much more a whole nation, for the faults of another; therefore the history, which tells us, that GOD punished the children of *Israel* with famine, for the crime of *Saul* in slaying the *Gibeonites*, is

\* See *Chubb's* pamphlet, on occasion of the opposition to Dr. *Rundle*, &c. p. 27, &c.

† Of whom I know no more than that the business of his whole life seems to be, to invalidate, to the utmost of his power, the credibility of the sacred historians.

‡ 1 Sam. xx. 15.—xxiv. 21, 22. Swear now therefore unto me, by the Lord, that thou wilt not cut off my seed after me; and that thou wilt not destroy my name, out of my father's house.

And David swore unto Saul.



incredible: consequently God's supposed answer, upon *David's* inquiry concerning the cause of the famine, was a forgery of *David's*.

IN answer to this charge, I own it inconsistent with equity, and with the divine declarations, to punish one man for the crimes of another, in which he had no share—But was this the case of the *Israelites*, in the point before us? A candid and good man would, methinks, be apt to doubt, and to hope, (and, it may be, Mr. *Chubb* did so) that it was not. The reader will judge for himself.

IT is evident from the ixth chapter of the book of *Joshua*, that, when *Joshua* and the princes made a league with the *Gibeonites*, the people were greatly offended with them \*. Whatever the pretences of this resentment might be, (nor did they want such as were plausible enough) the true reason seems sufficiently apparent; they were, by this league, deprived of the lands and spoils of the *Gibeonites*. Did these reasons cease in the days of *Saul*? Or rather did they not still subsist, and with more force, in proportion as the people of *Israel*, and their wants, increased, in a narrow land? But however this may be, why did *Saul* slay them now? The text plainly saith, that he did it *in his zeal for the children of Israel and Judah* (2 Sam. xxi. 2.). But the question still returns, How could the destroying these

\* Whoever will take the trouble to read this chapter, will plainly see, that the people would have had this league broken; which *Joshua* and the princes opposed; pleading the inviolable obligation of the solemn oath with which it was ratified.

poor people manifest *his zeal for Israel and Judah*? There is, to me, but one imaginable way how this could be done. The *Gibeonites* had one city in the tribe of *Judah*, and three in *Benjamin*: and when they were destroyed out of these cities, who could pretend any right to them, but *Israel* (that is, *Benjamin*) and *Judah*? So that *Saul* destroyed the *Gibeonites*, as the kindest and most obliging thing he could do for his people. And are we to believe, that they deemed that destruction a kindness to them, if they were no way benefited by it? Or are we to doubt whether they themselves were the instruments of this destruction? Was this kindness done them against their will? Or is there the least colour to believe, that they, in any degree, remonstrated against, or opposed, this proceeding of their prince? as they had a right, nay, were nearly interested and obliged to do, as a nation bound to make good the public faith they had given, and sworn to preserve; the violation of which might justly draw a curse on them, and their land. And were the people innocent, either in this agency, or this omission? And if they suffered a famine for the slaughter of the *Gibeonites*, did they suffer only for the sin of *Saul*? Or rather, were they not consenting, aiding and abetting, were they not sharers in his guilt? And is it unequitable, that they should also be sufferers? Or did they suffer beyond their demerit? *The divine punishment of perjury is destruction*, say the Twelve Tables\*. I am in

\* *Perjurii pœna divina exitium.*

good hopes, that this candid author will, at least, reverence *their* decision; and if he doth, I have some hopes, that we shall no more see the oracles of God and his holy prophet reproached, and their veracity exploded, upon such rash and unsearching surmises.

BUT however some great philosophers may allow themselves in this triumph of their reason, and insult upon sacred truths; good Christians will (I trust in God) continue nevertheless in the humility of believing the truth of the sacred history; will continue to believe the truly pious and noble spirit of *David* incapable of so atheistical, so murderous, so perjurious an hypocrisy: and I will yet hope, bad as the world is, that there are few spirits in it so unbridled, and unchecked in their censures and suspicions, as to believe this great man capable of so black, so deliberate, so *Machiavilian* a villainy.

BESIDES, if he were that hellish villain, which this calm and uncredulous philosopher takes him to be, why did he stop here? why slay only seven of *Saul's* descendants? why did he not cut them all off from the face of the earth? But, above all, why did he cut off only collateral branches, and spare all those in the direct line of succession to the throne? Why spared he the heir apparent to the crown, even when an accusation of high treason was laid against him? Why spared he *Mephibosheth* the son of *Jonathan*, and *Micah* his son, and his four sons (whom in all probability he lived to see)? And why did he not prevent, perhaps, the most numerous descent from  
any



B. 4. *the Life of King DAVID.* 241

any one person of the age he lived in? (See 1 Chron. viii. 33. and following verses.)

BUT why should *Saul's* descendants suffer for the sins of their fathers? Is not this contrary to God's own declaration? *Ezek. xviii. 20. The soul that sinneth it shall die, the son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, &c.*

BUT what if *Saul's* family were sharers in his guilt, instruments of his cruelty, and receivers of his robberies? Should they then go unpunished?

COMMENTATORS, who have considered this passage, are mightily puzzled to know why *Saul's* posterity were not rather punished for his cruelty to the priests of God, than to the *Gibeonites*. But the answer to this is obvious; his family refused to be the instruments of his cruelty in that massacre. This appears from 1 Sam. xxii. 17, 18. compared with ver. 7. of the same chapter. From the 17th and 18 ver. we learn, that *Saul's* servants refused to obey him in the slaughter of the priests; and that *Doeg the Edomite* (chief of his herdsmen) was the executioner. And from the 7th verse we learn, that these servants were of his own stock \*, and such of it too as he seemed most solicitous to prefer, and to provide for. *Then Saul said unto his servants, that stood about him, Hear now, ye Benjamites: Will the son of Jesse give every one of you*

\* In the *English* translation they are called *Benjamites*, but in the *Hebrew* they are called the sons of *Jemini*, who seems, from 1 Sam. ix. 1. to be a more immediate founder of *Saul's* family; so that these servants were not only of his tribe, but of his kindred.



*fields and vineyards, and make you captains of thousands, and captains of hundreds?* That is, Will he do for you as I have, and mean to do?

HIS captains, we here see, were of his own kindred; and whom can we presume him so solicitous to exalt to these stations, as his own sons and grandsons? or whom else can we presume him so solicitous to supply with fields and vineyards?

NOW I desire to know how *Saul* could do this? He could not so much as purchase the possessions of one tribe, and transfer them to another: much less could he transfer their lands by force. We know of no territories wrested from his enemies, to accommodate his *Benjamites*. It is true he smote the *Amalekites* from *Havilah* to *Shur* (1 *Sam.* xv. 7.); but it is nowhere said, that he took possession of their country, or that he took so much as one city from them; or, if he did, the country or city so taken must immediately become the property of that tribe, in whose lot that part of the *Amalekite* land lay; which most certainly was not *Benjamin*. But although it should be allowed, that he took some cities from the *Amalekites*, there is good reason to believe, that he lost more to the *Philistines*\*, and possibly some of them belonging to *Benjamin*.

\* 1 *Sam.* xxxi. 7. *And when the men of Israel, that were on the other side of the valley, and they that were on the other side of Jordan, saw that the men of Israel fled, and that Saul and his sons were dead, they forsook the cities, and fled; and the Philistines came and dwelt in them.*

UPON the whole, it is evident to a demonstration, that *Saul* had no possible way of enriching his *Benjamites*, with fields and vineyards, but by destroying and dispossessing the *Gibeonites*. When therefore we are told from the mouth of God, that the plague sent upon the people was *for Saul and his bloody house, because he slew the Gibeonites\**, is it not evident, that it was sent for their guilt, as well as his? And can we imagine, that this guilt of theirs could be any thing less, than that of being the instruments of his executions? It is plain, that they were his captains of hundreds, and captains of thousands; and it is as plain, that, as such, they must be the instruments of his cruelty: and if they were not, why are they called *bloody*? They refused, indeed, to slaughter the priests, at his command; bad as the *Benjamites* were, they had not yet forgotten to *fear God, and to reverence his priests*. But is there the least colour of reason to believe, that they were so scrupulous with regard to the *Gibeonites*? And if they were not, is there less equity in God's destroying their sons, for the sins of their fathers, which they adopted and shared in, than there was in his destroying *Jehoram*, the son of *Ahab*, for that vineyard, which the father had cruelly and unjustly acquired, and the son as unjustly detained? And indeed there seems to be no imaginable reason, why *Saul*, when he had destroyed the priests of *Nob*, should, after that, destroy the

\* The words which we render, *he slew*, might as properly be rendered, *they slew*.

inhabitants of that whole city, but because they were most, if not all of them, *Gibeonites*, (who were obliged to attend there upon the altar) whose spoils might become a prey.

To this may be added, that three of the *Gibeonite* cities lay (as I now observed) within the lot of *Benjamin*\*; and how could *Saul* so conveniently enrich his tribe, and his family, as by dividing these possessions amongst them?

AND now, as I humbly apprehend, was fulfilled, more clearly, more naturally, and more circumstantially, than in any or all other events, throughout the whole history of the Scriptures, that prophecy of their father *Jacob* concerning them, *Gen. xlix. 27. Benjamin shall raven as a wolf: in the morning he shall devour the prey, and in the evening he shall divide the spoil.* And indeed what can be a stronger or a clearer emblem of a wolf tearing and ravaging an innocent flock of sheep, than *Saul* destroying a quiet, submitting, unoffending race of *Gibeonites*, and, when he had done so, dividing their spoils among his partners in the prey? It must be owned, that the pretext for doing so was not unplaussible, inasmuch as these men were spared, contrary to the express command of God. And for whom do we think *Saul* was more solicitous to provide, out of these spoils, than his own sons by

\* See *Josh. ix. 17.* compared with *chap. xviii. ver. 25, 26. chap. ix. ver. 17.* And the children of Israel journeyed, and came unto their cities on the third day: now their cities were *Gibeon*, and *Chephirah*, and *Beeroth*, and *Kirjath-jearim*, *Chap. xviii. ver. 25. Gibeon*, and *Ramah*, and *Beeroth*. *Ver. 26. And Mizpeh*, and *Chephirah*, and *Mozab*.



*Rizpah* his concubine, and the children of his daughter? And this reasoning is strengthened by reflecting, that *Nob* was in the tribe of *Benjamin*; and, when both the priests and *Gibeonites* were destroyed out of this city, who then could take possession of it but *Benjamin*?

WHEN the *Gibeonites* were taken into league, they were left in possession of their cities: this sufficiently appears from their sending to *Joshua* (*Josh.* x.) to deliver them from the *Amorite* kings, who besieged their capital, and had combined to destroy them: and he did as they desired. Their complaint against *Saul* now is, that *he devised to destroy them from remaining in any of the coasts of Israel* (2 Sam. xxi. 5.) Can this complaint mean less, than that *Saul* had taken measures to strip them of all their possessions? That he stripped them of one city, hath fully been shewn in the preceding part of this history: and their complaint now is, that he devised to strip them of all: and why he did so, is, I believe, no longer a question.

How just are the judgments of GOD! If *Saul* destroyed an innocent people to make provision for the offspring of a concubine, and the offspring of a daughter, which she bare in consequence of his own faith to *David* violated \*, could any thing be more equal, than that this

\* *Merab*, the mother of five of these victims, was promised to *David*, upon a solemn and public compact; the conditions of which were fully performed on his side, to the great glory and security of the state; and then, in violation of that solemn and repeated engagement, given to another, 1 Sam. ch. xvii. ch. xviii.



very issue, chief agents of his cruelty, should now be called for, to make atonement for that guilt!

LET others find their account, and found their fame, in reviling the divine dispensations recorded in the Scriptures; be it ever my glory to reverence them! to reverence them in the silence of my closet, and to publish that reverence to the world, (when the revilings of others provoke me to it) without any view to the wages either of vanity or wealth!

GIVE me leave to add, that when I see some determined philosophers, of the last and present age, pursuing the reputation of *David*, with as murderous an intent as *Saul* did his life, I cannot help imagining, that I hear this hero crying out to them, as he did to *Saul*, (1 Sam. xxiv. 12, 13.) *The Lord judge between me and thee, and the Lord avenge me of thee—As saith the proverb of the antients, Wickedness proceedeth from the wicked.*

---

## C H A P. XVI.

DAVID enters into new Wars with Philistia. *A Conjecture concerning the Cause of them. The first and last Edition of the Eighteenth Psalm (published upon this Occasion) briefly compared. A Digression, upon the Usefulness of Music to form the Manners. DAVID'S last prophetic Words. A short Conjecture concerning his Worthies.*

THE history of the famine, under the reign of *David*, is succeeded by a very short account of a war with the *Philistines*; or rather of four successive wars: which seem to have lasted a considerable time, inasmuch as they were not ended till after four pitched battles; each of which concluded in *David's* favour. Nor are any other particulars related of them, but that a man of gigantic stature and strength fell on the side of the *Philistines*, in each of them; the last of whom had six fingers on each hand, and six toes on each foot\*; and that, in

\* Instances of gigantic men are familiar enough in the collections of the commentators, on this, and other passages of the same nature: and Dr. Patrick quotes *Tavernier's* relation of the grand signior's seraglio, page 95. wherein he tells us, That the eldest son of the emperor of *Java*, who reigned in the year 1648, when he was in that island, had six fingers on each hand, and as many toes on each foot, all of equal length.

the first of these battles *David* was in danger of being slain by *Ishbi-benob*, the son of a giant, (whether of *Goliath*, or some other, is not known) had he not been timely succoured by *Abishai*, the son of *Zeruiah*, who smote and slew him. The account left us of this matter by *Josephus* is to this purpose: That *David*, having put the enemy to flight, and being foremost, and carried too far in the ardour of the pursuit, after some time, grew weary and faint with the fatigue: which *Ishbi-benob* perceiving, and being armed with an huge spear, (as *Josephus* relates) and girded with a new sword, (as the text is understood) found that a fit occasion to assault the king; and had succeeded in his purpose, had not *Abishai* come seasonably to *David's* aid, and destroyed his adversary.

THE apprehension of the king's danger struck his people with great concern and consternation; and they immediately bound themselves by a solemn oath, never more to suffer him to hazard his person in battle; adding a reason, which sufficiently indicates their high opinion and esteem of him; *That thou quench not the light\* of Israel*, lest they should be deprived of a prince who was at once their guide, and their glory!

THE cause or occasion of these wars is nowhere mentioned in the sacred history; but there is a passage, 2 *Sam.* xv. 18, 19, &c. on which to ground a rational conjecture concerning the origin

\* In Hebrew, lamp.

of them: *And all his servants passed on beside him; and all the Cherethites, and all the Pelethites, and all the Gittites, six hundred men which came after him from Gath, passed on before the king. Then said the king to Ittai the Gittite, Wherefore goest thou also with us? Return to thy place, and abide with the king: for thou art a stranger, and also an exile—whereas thou camest but yesterday, &c. And Ittai the Gittite passed over, and all his men.* From whence it appears, that *Ittai*, an exile from *Gath*, arrived at *Jerusalem*, with all his men, the very eve of *David's* flight before his son *Absalom*. From whence I conjecture, that the *Philistines*, hearing of *Absalom's* rebellion, took that opportunity to shake off the *Israelite* yoke; and to that purpose drove out all the friends and favourers of *David's* government over them; and, among the rest, *Ittai* and his followers; who arrived very providentially at *Jerusalem*, to support *David* in the extremity of his distress. And, as this revolt of *Philistia* was succeeded by a long famine in *David's* dominions, we could not reasonably expect to hear of any measures taken by that prince to chastise that revolt, till after the ceasing of this calamity; and then we immediately hear of the wars now recounted.

WHEN these wars were happily ended, and *David* was in perfect peace, both at home and abroad, and in a fair prospect of continuing so for the rest of his life, he then revised and published the last edition of the eighteenth *Psalms*; which contains a summary of God's signal mercies



cies and deliverances wrought for him; with such an overflowing of gratitude for the divine goodness to him, as infinitely surpasses all other compositions of all other men, upon this head. And, what is very singular, and I hope not unworthy the reader's notice, he hath found the secret of most effectually perpetuating his own praise, by perpetuating that of his Maker; whilst he labours to make the praises of GOD glorious, he makes his own eminent, above all other mortals! A single instance will evince this: We never should have known, that *David* was the swiftest and the strongest of all mankind, if his own thanksgivings had not told us so; if he had not blessed GOD for giving him the swiftness of the hart, and the strength to break a bow of steel.

THE critical reader will, I hope, not deem it beneath his curiosity, to see a few passages in this *Psalms*, published in *David's* youth, compared with the corrections of his more advanced years: the first, as they are found in the book of *Psalms*; and the last, as they are published in the twenty-second chapter of the second book of *Samuel*.

## PSALMS.

VER. 1. *I will love thee, O Lord, my Strength.* 2. *The Lord is my Rock, and my Fortress, and my Deliverer; my God, my Strength,*

## SAMUEL.

VER. 2. *The Lord is my Rock, and my Fortress, and my Deliverer; 3. The God of my rock, in him will I trust; he is my Shield, and*

<p><i>Strength, in whom I will trust; my Buckler, and the Horn of my salvation; my high Tower. 5. The sorrows of death compassed me, and the floods of the ungodly men made me afraid.</i></p>	<p><i>and the Horn of my salvation, my high Tower, and my Refuge, my Saviour*. Thou savest me from violence. 5. When the waves of death compassed me, the floods of the ungodly men made me afraid.</i></p>
--	---

EVERY eye will discern to what infinite advantage this expression, *The sorrows of death*, is changed into *The waves of death*. Nothing can be a finer emblem of an host of men, in their several ranks, than the waves of the sea, succeeding one another in their natural order. And, when we consider them pressing forward to the destruction of their adversaries, they may very properly be termed *waves of death*.

PSALMS.

VER. 7. *Then the earth shook and trembled, the foundations also of the hills moved, and were shaken, because he was wroth.*

SAMUEL.

VER. 8. *Then the earth shook and trembled, the foundations of heaven moved and shook, because he was wroth.*

THE hills, shaking from the foundation at the wrath of GOD, is a noble idea: but the

\* As his deliverances were now multiplied, his gratitude seems, as it were, exaggerated, and makes new efforts to exert itself, when every idea, that would express it, seems exhausted.

foundations of heaven, shaking at it, is a much nobler! The thought too is strictly just; for as the eye of the spectator is tossed to-and-fro, in an earthquake, the heavens must also appear to him to be agitated in the same manner.

ALTHOUGH *David's* main purpose in publishing these divine hymns, setting them to suited music, and singing them in the public worship of God, was, to publish to the whole world his endless gratitude, for the various and wonderful mercies of God, bestowed upon him; yet had he a further, and, if possible, a nobler purpose, in this conduct; I mean, to disperse true religion throughout every part of his dominions; to inspire the hearts of his people with a true and lively sense of gratitude to God, their Benefactor, Protector, and Saviour, as well as his. *David* well knew, that true gratitude to God is the surest source of true religion, and every duty enjoined by it; and when it is poured out for public blessings, in which all partake, naturally mixes with every social affection, and blends them, as it were, into its own being; and by this means becomes the very best bond of society. And therefore *David*, by perpetually pouring out the praises of God, in the most exalted and heavenly compositions, and taking all occasions to recount his endless mercies and deliverances wrought for his people from the beginning, took the most effectual means to fill their hearts with gratitude to their great Benefactor; and, in consequence of that, to render them religiously observant of his laws;



to render them humane, friendly, and affectionate to one another, and conscientiously faithful and dutiful to their sovereign.

THE wisest and most eminent of the antients have left many encomiums, both upon the separate and joint power of music and poetry, towards softening, civilizing, and mending the manners of mankind; and the candid reader will, I am sure, pardon, if not thank, me for transcribing a passage to this purpose from Mr. *Rollin*, one of the most polite and truly valuable authors of this or any age; the greatest lover of truth, and of mankind! *vol. iv. of his Antient History, p. 323, 324. Music was cultivated with no less application and success. The antients ascribed wonderful effects to it. They believed it very proper to calm the passions, soften the manners, and even humanize people naturally savage and barbarous. Polybius, a grave and serious historian, and who is certainly worthy of belief, attributes the extreme difference between two people of Arcadia, the one infinitely beloved and esteemed for the elegance of their manners, their benevolent inclinations, humanity to strangers, and piety to the gods; the other, on the contrary, generally reproached and hated for their malignity, brutality, and irreligion; Polybius, I say, ascribes this difference to the study of music (I mean, says he, the true and noble music) cultivated with care by the one, and absolutely neglected by the other people.*

IF such have been the effects of the sole and separate power of noble music, what might not be hoped from it, when it is built upon, and  
sup.



supported by, the noblest, the sublimest, the most heavenly strains of divine poetry, by which the world was ever delighted, informed, or amended! And such, beyond all controversy, or pretence of a rational doubt, are the sacred hymns and psalms of *David*.

PINDAR places this elogium in the front of *Hiero's* character: That he took a noble delight in the most exquisite strokes and performances of poetry and music. Could he have added to this, that he had a mastery over all mortals, in the composition of both; and crowned all, by the application of both to their noblest ends and uses; the inspiring of true piety and virtue into the hearts of men, and celebrating the praises of GOD; recounting the works and wonders of his providence, and infinite mercies to mankind; how nobly had his character been completed! how had it been, at once, exalted and unrivalled! The thinking reader will easily satisfy himself, that this glory, which *Pindar* could not confer upon *Hiero*, *David* hath, most unselfishly, and without the least taint or view of vanity, secured to himself.

AFTER *David's* last revival and edition of the eighteenth *Psalms*, now recounted, the sacred historian gives us to understand, that the last words which he spake, and committed to writing, as a prophet, are those which immediately follow this *Psalms*, in the second book of *Samuel*, chap. xxiii. And indeed it is of vast importance to the faithful, that they are committed to writing;

ing; because he there expressly declares, *That the Spirit of God spake by him.*

THE last words of great men, solemnly delivered, and upon points of great importance, have always been thought worthy of peculiar regard; and have accordingly been carefully recorded: and therefore these of so great a prince and prophet as *David*, will not, I presume, be deemed unworthy the regard of the most incurious reader; especially as they will not take up much more than one minute of his time.

*Now these be the last words of David: David the son of Jesse said, and the man who was raised up on high, the anointed of the God of Jacob, and the sweet psalmist of Israel, said; The Spirit of the Lord spake by me, and his word was in my tongue. The God of Israel said, the Rock of Israel spake unto me, He that ruleth over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God: and he shall be as the light of the morning, when the sun riseth, even a morning without clouds; as the tender grass springing out of the earth, by clear shining after rain. Although my house be not so with God; yet he hath made with me an everlasting covenant, ordered in all things, and sure: for this is all my salvation, and all my desire, although he make it not to grow.*

*But the sons of Belial shall be all of them as thorns thrust away, because they cannot be taken with hands; but the man that shall touch them, must be fenced with iron, and the staff of a spear: and they shall be utterly burnt with fire in the same place.*

How glorious a conclusion of so noble an office is this! to recollect God's signal mercies and blessings bestowed upon him! His exaltation to royalty, from a low estate! and his gifts of prophecy, poetry, and harmony! his special command to him as a king, and his eternal covenant with him and his seed! The continuance of his temporal kingdom, but with no increase of grandeur, in his posterity! Their sure salvation and protection, whilst they continued in the covenant made with their father! and the final reprobation, and destruction of the wicked! and, above all, that blessed and permanent assurance to the faithful, That *the Spirit of the Lord spake by him, and his word was in his tongue!* Thus sealing the truth and certainty of his divine inspiration, and in consequence of that, the sacred authority of his writings, to endless generations.

THEN follows the noble catalogue of *David's* worthies; the noblest and most truly renowned of all antiquity; inasmuch as there is reason to believe, that any act of notorious guilt excluded from it: for why, otherwise, so great a captain, and so brave a man, as *Joab*, should be left out of that list, when his two brothers, and even his armour bearer, are included in it, I own I cannot comprehend. And this conjecture is, I think, strengthened by observing several names in the list of these worthies, 2 *Sam.* xxiii. left out in the subsequent list, 1 *Chron.* xi. and a good many other names added in this later list. From whence I conclude, that



some of the worthies in the first list, had their names rased out, on account of some subsequent demerit, after the authors of the second book of *Samuel* were dead.

---

## C H A P. XVII.

### *DAVID's Numbering of the People: and the Plague which ensued.*

**T**HE people of *Israel* were scarcely recovered from the calamity of that famine, which infested them for three years, when they were visited by another chastisement, apparently more fatal, although of a very short continuance: a pestilence of three days; occasioned by the king's numbering of the people.

THE most rational account of the matter is this: GOD had given them a command, by *Moses*, *Exod.* xxx. that when they took the sum of the people, after their number, every man so numbered, from twenty years old and upwards, should pay half a shekel to the sanctuary, as a ransom for his soul to GOD; under the penalty of a plague, to ensue the neglect of such payment: and accordingly that payment was made, when they were numbered, *Exod.* xxxviii. 24 \*.

And

\* If it be objected, that there are two other numberings mentioned in the Bible, *Numb.* i. and *Numb.* xxvi. without the mention of any payment to the sanctuary; I answer, That there is indeed no express mention made of any such payment; but I think it



And surely a most rational and religious capitation this was, indicating, that their lives were the forfeit of their sins, to GOD: who, in mercy, accepted a small ransom for them; but an equal one for the lives of the highest and the lowest amongst them, inasmuch as they were all of equal value in his sight, with whom *there is no acceptance of persons.*

DAVID, now (probably from an impulse of vanity) desirous to know the strength of his kingdom, which he rightly judged to consist more in the numbers of valiant men, than in the extent of empire, ordered the sum of the people to be taken, *from twenty years old and upward*; without ordering the *Mosaic* ransom to be paid: for which reason a plague immediately ensued, which destroyed seventy thousand of them, within the time determined by the prophet. And indeed, as the people were now more signally blessed by GOD than at any time, the neglect of paying this tribute to their great Sovereign, under whose protection they were so wonderfully raised to wealth, and dominion over their enemies, became more odiously infamous and ungrateful. And it is to me unaccountably astonishing, how *David* could be brought to suffer it: but in truth he did more;

sufficiently implied in both places; for, *Numb. i. 54.* it is said, *And the children of Israel did according to all that the Lord commanded Moses:* And in *Numb. xxvi. 4.* they are commanded to take the sum of the people, *as the Lord commanded Moses, and the children of Israel, which went forth out of the Land of Egypt.* And we know, that the payment of the half-shekel made a part of that command.

he not only suffered, but enjoined and urged it. And, to increase our wonder, *David* enjoined, and *Joab* remonstrated against it; remonstrated against it, not only with fine address, but with a spirit of true religion. His address is seen 2 *Sam.* xxiv. 3. for, when *David* gave him his command, to go through all the tribes of *Israel*, and number the people—*Joab* said unto the king, Now the Lord thy God add unto the people (how many soever they be) an hundredfold, and that the eyes of my lord the king may see it: but why doth my lord the king delight in this thing? And the religion of this conduct is seen from what is added, 1 *Chron.* xxi. 3. Why doth my lord require this thing? Why will he be a cause of trespass to *Israel*? But *David* was so bent upon the purpose, that nothing could dissuade him from it. And *Joab*, and the captains of the host, were immediately dispatched to execute it, and returned not to *Jerusalem* till the end of nine months and twenty days; and even then returned without accomplishing their purpose; for *Levi* and *Benjamin* were not taken into the computation: For (says the text) the king's word was abominable unto *Joab*. Besides, as God had promised to multiply them as the stars of heaven, and the sands of the sea, they thought it impious, so much as to attempt an exact computation of all orders and ages amongst them.

THERE are two returns left us of this numbering (one 2 *Sam.* xxiv: and the other 1. *Chron.* xxi); which differ considerably from one another, especially in relation to the men of *Israel*;

which, in the first, are returned but eight hundred thousand; but, in the last, eleven hundred thousand. But I think a careful attendance to both the texts, and to the nature of the thing, will easily reconcile them. The matter appears to me thus: *Joab*, who resolved, from the beginning, not to number the whole of the people, but who, at the same time, wished to shew his own tribe in the best light, and make their number as considerable as he could, numbered every man amongst them, from twenty years old and upwards, and so returned them to be five hundred thousand: but in *Israel* he only made a return of such men as were exercised and proved in arms; and therefore the number of persons above twenty years old is less in his return (2 *Sam.* xxiv.).

THE reader will best judge, whether the letter of the texts doth not justify this conjecture: that of 2 *Sam.* xxiv. stands thus; *And there were in Israel eight hundred thousand valiant men, that drew the sword—and the men of Judah (not the men of tried valour only, but the whole) were five hundred thousand men:* whereas the account we have of this matter in 1 *Chron.* xxi. stands thus: *And all they of Israel were a thousand thousand, and an hundred thousand men, that drew sword: and Judah four hundred threescore and ten thousand men that drew sword.* In a word, in 2 *Sam.* xxiv. 9. the whole of *Judah* is returned, and only the men of proved valour in *Israel*. In 1 *Chron.* xxi. 5. the whole of *Israel* is expressly returned; but the particie *all* is not



expresly prefixed to those of *Judah*; and therefore possibly the men of tried valour in that tribe are only included in that return: and, if so, the returns must of necessity be very different. Indeed it seems to me as if all the sacred writers were upon their guard against giving an exact return.

How unstable are all human purposes and pursuits! *David*, whose heart was so lately set upon numbering the people, sees his guilt, and repents his purpose, the moment it was finished: that heart which was so lately dilated with vanity \*, now shrinks into contrition and penitence.

It is somewhere said of *Epaminondas*, that, the next day after the battle of *Leuctra*, he was seen remarkably sad and dejected; and being asked the reason, answered, I yesterday suffered myself to be too much elated with vanity, and I am mortifying for it to-day. This seems to have been pretty much the case of *David*; whose vain heart now recoils, with dreadful pangs, upon his breast. *And David's heart smote him*, (says the text) *after that he had numbered the people: and David said unto the Lord, I have sinned greatly in that I have done: and now I beseech thee, O Lord, take away the iniquity of thy servant; for I have done very foolishly.*

\* And perhaps this may be the reason, why this action is imputed to the instigation of *Satan*, the father of pride.



IN this situation of mind, *Gad*, *David's* seer, found him the next morning\*, when he came to denounce the divine vengeance upon his guilt: and to shew him, and the world, that the vengeance he came now to denounce, could be no casual calamity, nor the effect of any natural cause, he gave him his choice of three evils; one of which must immediately be inflicted upon him? *Shall seven years of famine come unto thee in thy land? Or wilt thou flee three months before thine enemies, while they pursue thee? Or that there be three days pestilence in thy land? Now, advise, and see what answer I shall return to Him that sent me.* To these dreadful and distracting alternatives, *David* made this truly heroic and religious reply: *And David said unto Gad, I am in a great streight: let us fall now into the hand of the Lord, (for his mercies are great) and let me not fall into the hand of man.* Had he chosen either war or famine, his wealth and his power had easily secured himself and family from any imminent danger of either: but in this consisted his heroism, that he chose that evil, which he himself risked, in common with his meanest subject.

THE event was immediately answerable to the choice; a plague instantly ensued, and con-

\* I must here observe an egregious error in our *English* translation: which gives us to apprehend, that *David's* penitence was the effect of *Gad's* threat: FOR, (says the text) *when David was up in the morning, the word of the Lord came unto the prophet Gad, David's seer, saying, Go, and say unto David, &c.* Whereas the word which is translated *For*, should be translated *And*; and it is not a causal, but a connective particle.

tinued to the time appointed; which destroyed, in that very short space, seventy thousand men, from *Dan* to *Beerseba*: a calamity which hath no parallel, in the whole compass of history.

DAVID, deeply afflicted and penitent under this heavy chastisement, assembled the elders of *Israel*; and all of them, cloathed in sackcloth, humbled themselves in a most solemn and public manner before GOD; imploring his mercy. and deprecating his vengeance. And, whilst they were in this condition, *David*, lifting up his eyes to GOD, *saw the angel of the Lord standing between the earth and the heaven; having a drawn sword in his hand, stretched out over Jerusalem.* Upon the sight of which, *David*, and all his attending elders, fell upon their faces, to the earth; and *David* cried out to GOD, *Is it not I that commanded the people to be numbered? Even I it is that have sinned, and done evil indeed. But for these sheep, what have they done? Let thine hand, I pray thee, O Lord my God, be on me, and on my father's house; but not on thy people, that they should be plagued.*

THIS supplication and humiliation of *David*, and the elders, softened the divine wrath, and arrested the vengeance. *And the Lord said to the angel, that destroyed the people, It is enough; stay now thine hand.* And the place where the avenging angel was staid, was over the threshing-floor of *Araunah* the *Jebusite*.

THEN the angel of the LORD commanded *Gad*, instantly to order *David* to go and set up an altar to GOD in the threshing-floor of

*Araunah* the *Jebusite*. *David* immediately obeyed, and treated with *Araunah* for the threshing-floor, signifying to him, at the same time, the reason why he desired to purchase it: the truth of which *Araunah* himself must easily be satisfied of, inasmuch as he also, with his four sons, had seen the destroying angel, and hid themselves in terror of the sight. And therefore *David* had no sooner made the proposal, but the generous *Araunah* replied, with a ready offer of every thing he wanted; land, oxen for sacrifice, and threshing instruments for fuel, and the wheat for the meat offering, without any price or purchase. But this *David* absolutely refused; declaring, that he would buy every thing at the full price; and that he would not sacrifice to God of that which cost him nothing: and accordingly he bought the place for six hundred shekels of gold; and the oxen for fifty shekels of silver\*. And *David* built there an altar unto the Lord, and offered burnt-offerings and peace-offerings, and called upon the Lord, and

\* Much difficulty hath been raised upon the articles of this sale, in a case, to me, sufficiently plain. The authors of 2 Sam. xxiv. tell us, that *David* bought the threshing-floor, but do not say for what; and then immediately add, and the oxen for fifty shekels of silver. Now, it is but supposing such a stop placed after the word *floor*, as shews it to be a sentence distinct from what follows, or supposing the following clause to be included in a parenthesis (a construction which must be supposed in all other writings, in a thousand instances); and the matter is clear of all difficulty. And that one or both of these must be the case, is sufficiently evident to me from 1 Chron. xxi. 25. where the price paid for the place is expressly set down to be six hundred shekels of gold, without mentioning any price paid for the oxen.

*he answered him from heaven by fire upon the altar of burnt-offering, and the plague was stayed from Israel.*

HOWEVER criminal this numbering was in *David*, yet there are three points of importance clear from it.

THE first is, the signal completion of God's promise to *Abraham*, of multiplying his seed, as the sands of the sea; inasmuch as the multitudes of men, comprehended within the narrow limits of *Judea*, even at this time, appears from this numeration to be great beyond all comparison, although confessedly less considerable than under some succeeding reigns.

THE second is, that it appears from the accounts left us of this matter, that all the cities of the *Canaanite* coast, and particularly *Zidon*, and the strong hold of *Tyre*, were under the dominion of *David*. But this I apprehend could only be the ancient *Tyre*, or *Palætyrus*; inasmuch as *Hiram*, who lived in friendship both with *David* and *Solomon*, was king of the other *Tyre*: which, from a letter of his to *Solomon*, quoted by *Josephus*, appears to have been situate in an island (*Antiq.* l. viii. c. 2). But this, however, no way infers the king of that *Tyre* not to have been tributary both to *David* and *Solomon*; as I apprehend he was, from his calling both *David* and *Solomon* his lord, and himself and people *Solomon's* servants, 2 *Chron.* ii. 14, 15. Or, if he were not, *David's* dominion over *Zidon* alone will go a great way towards accounting for those immense treasures, which



which he amassed for building the temple; inasmuch as *Zidon* is allowed to have been, from the remotest antiquity, one of the greatest marts of the world, which engrossed a great share of its wealth; and into which, and into *Tyre*, the veins of all its richest mines, then in their vigour, were naturally drained. And that *Zidon* was early renowned for wealth and magnificence, sufficiently appears from its being styled, even as early as the days of *Joshua*, *Zidon the great*, Josh. xi. 8.

THE third is, that *David* was not the cruel conqueror, which some men so eagerly infer him, from some parts of his history, ill considered, and of consequence little understood; inasmuch as we learn from this transaction, that, in the height of his resentment against the *Je-busites*, he spared *Araunah*, a king; in all probability, prince and proprietor of the place; and suffered him to live in peace and plenty.

IF it be asked, why the people were punished for this guilt of their prince? I answer, (besides the common observation, *Quicquid delirant reges, &c.*) in the sentiments of Mr. *Whiston's* comment on this part of *Josephus's* history; That neither *David's* nor the *Sanhedrim's* neglect of exacting this tribute could excuse the people from paying it, when an express law of GOD enjoined it.

To speak freely upon the point, I can conceive but one reason, why *David* now neglected to injoin the payment of this tribute: he was the great patron of religion, and protector of  
the

the church of GOD; and (if such a spirit then reigned in his nation, as now reigneth in ours) such a sum of money, as this tax would have brought into the sanctuary, could not fail to have raised an high outcry of bigotry, and priestcraft against him: and so he suffered the people to be plagued, rather than let the priesthood be enriched.

I SHALL only add, that the ninety-first *Psalm* seems evidently to have been written by *David*, in commemoration of his deliverance from this public calamity. That signal protection of Divine Providence, which he had now experienced, naturally prompted him to break out into those expressions of hope and trust in GOD, of which it is hard to say whether the piety or the poetry be more exalted: *He that dwelleth in the secret place of the Most High, shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty. Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler; and from the noisome pestilence.*

*Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day.*

*Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noon-day.*

*A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right-hand; but it shall not come nigh thee.*

## C H A P. XVIII.

DAVID'S Preparations to build the Temple: his private Exhortations to Solomon, and the Princes, to carry on the Work.

WHEN *David* saw, that his sacrifice was miraculously accepted of Almighty God, by the descent of fire from heaven, which consumed it upon the altar, he immediately concluded, that this was the place which God had chosen, to establish his worship there; and therefore he continued to offer up sacrifices upon this altar, and accordingly told his people, that *this was the house of the Lord God, and this the altar of the burnt-offering for Israel.*

It is true, the tabernacle of the LORD, which *Moses* made in the wilderness, and the altar for the burnt-offering, were, at that season, in the high place of *Gibeon*; and thither he should ordinarily have resorted, to sacrifice his burnt-offerings: but inasmuch as the angel of the LORD had expressly commanded him to erect an altar in the threshing-floor of *Araunah*, and on that very spot, over which the avenging angel was arrested, and God appeased, he naturally concluded, that this was the appointed place of atonement, so solemnly set apart for sacrifice: and therefore he feared to resort to *Gibeon* any more,

more, for any purpose of religion \*. And there is no doubt but he was confirmed in his reasoning upon this point, by reflecting, that this was the place appointed by GOD himself for the sacrificing of *Isaac*; and where the faith of his father *Abraham* was so amazingly tried, so gloriously accepted, and so nobly rewarded.

ALL these concurring circumstances and considerations sufficiently pointed out this, as the place of that temple, which was to be the glory of the whole earth. And accordingly *David* set himself, from that moment, to prepare materials of all sorts for it, with all imaginable application and zeal; as indeed he had done for many years before.

AND indeed there is no doubt but it was at this time, that GOD inspired him with the plan of the whole work; with all its parts, dimensions, and utensils; all which, he himself expressly assures us †, the *Lord made him understand in writing by his hand upon him*.

THAT the architecture of this temple was of divine original, I, for my part, am fully satisfied, from this passage; and I am confirmed in this persuasion by finding from *Vilalpandus*, that the *Roman*, at least the *Greek*, architecture is derived from this, as from its fountain: and, in my humble opinion, even an infidel may easily believe these to be of divine original; inasmuch

\* But *David* could not go before it (that is, the altar at *Gibeon*); for he was afraid because of the sword of the angel of the Lord, 1 Chron. xxi. 30.

† 1 Chron. xxviii. 19.



as they are (at least the latter is) found perfect in the earliest models: nor hath the utmost reach of human wisdom, invention, and industry, been ever able (although often endeavouring it) to improve or alter it, but to disadvantage, throughout the course of so many ages.

THAT *David* understood what he was about, is evident from the nature of the thing; for, if he had not been complete master of the whole design, he could not have directed the hewing of the stones, nor adjusted the exact weight of all the utensils, as he certainly did, with great care, 1 *Chron.* xxviii. 12, &c.

IN the first of these works he employed all the *strangers*, that is, proselytes of the land; who, probably, were more skilled in works of that nature: or, possibly, he chose not to take his own people from the culture of the ground, and the several pursuits of rural industry.

HE prepared iron and brass in abundance, and without weight, for the joinings (says the text) probably both of the stones and timber, which was all cedar; and supplied him, in vast plenty, by the *Zidonians* and *Tyrians*. He considered, that the work was to be great and magnificent, beyond any thing yet known to the world; and therefore the preparations were to be proportionable. This the sacred historian fully informs us of, in 1 *Chron.* xxii. 5. *And David said, Solomon my son is young and tender; and the house that is to be builded to the Lord, must be exceeding magnifical, of fame, and of glory, throughout all*

*all countries: I will therefore now make preparations for it. So David prepared abundantly before his death: taking care, at the same time, to inform his son Solomon fully of his whole purpose; and exhorting him, who was appointed by God to execute it, to pursue and accomplish it with diligence and vigour; adding, that he himself once had it fully in his intentions to build an house unto the Name of the Lord his God; but was expressly forbidden to pursue his purpose, because he had been a man of war, and had shed much blood upon the earth; but that God had assured him, at the same time, that he would give him a son, who should be a man of peace, and his name Solomon; and that he should build him an house. And, upon this ground, he exhorts him to go on with the work: Now, my son, the Lord be with thee, and prosper thee; and build the house of the Lord thy God, as he hath said of thee. He then adds a most earnest exhortation to him, to serve and to fear God, as he hoped for his blessing upon his house and nation; and concludes with an earnest supplication to God, to inspire his heart with wisdom, and a steady sense of duty to him, and to his people.*

THIS done, *David* next proceeds to tell his son, what preparations he himself had made for the work: *Now, behold, in my trouble, I have prepared for the house of the Lord an hundred thousand talents of gold, and a thousand thousand talents of silver; and of brass, and iron, without weight (for it is in abundance); timber also, and stone, have I prepared; and thou mayst add there-*  
to.

*to. Moreover, there are workmen with thee in abundance; hewers and workers of stone and timber, and all manner of cunning men, for every manner of work. Of the gold, the silver, and the brass, and the iron, there is no number. Arise therefore, and be doing; and the Lord be with thee.*

DAVID'S next care was, to engage all the great men of the realm to be aiding and assisting to his son, in the carrying on of this great work. And to this purpose he laid his particular commands (as I apprehend) singly, and apart \*, upon each of them. And after this, convening them in one body, he publicly exhorted them all to the same purpose, in an oration, which (to me) is by far the noblest of the kind extant in the world. But, before I proceed to consider that performance, I must beg the reader's attention to some points of great importance antecedent to it.

*\* Is not the Lord your God with you? And hath he not given you rest on every side? For he hath given the inhabitants of the land into mine hand, and the land is subdued before the Lord, and before his people. Now set your heart, and your soul, to seek the Lord your God: arise therefore, and build ye the sanctuary of the Lord God, to bring the ark of the covenant of the Lord, and the holy vessels of God, into the house that it to be built to the name of the Lord.*

This, I apprehend, is recorded by the sacred writer, as the substance of David's private exhortations to each of the princes, upon this head.



## C H A P. XIX.

*A Dissertation upon the immense Treasures left by DAVID, for building the Temple.*

THERE is no one point relating to the sacred writings, in which I find learned men, and critics of all kinds, so greatly and distantly divided, as this of the measures left by *David*, for building the temple; some thinking them incredibly immense, and others doubling them; some suspecting some numeral errors in the text, and others sinking the talent almost to nothing, in order to guard against the supposition of any such errors; whilst others seem to value themselves upon having discovered new veins of wealth, from whence much greater treasures might have been derived.

IN the midst of this uncertainty, there are some points, I think, clear and incontestable.

THE first is, that there is not the least ground to believe, that the *Hebrews* ever varied their weights and measures, at least before the captivity. And therefore *David's* talent was the same with that of *Moses*.

THE next plain point is, that the *Hebrew* talent was of a considerable weight.

WHAT *Moses's* talent was, is known to a demonstration, from the account left us of the first capitulation in the wilderness, *Exod.* xxxviii. 25, 26.



in which six hundred and three thousand five hundred and fifty men, being taxed at half a shekel an head, raised a sum of an hundred talents of silver, and a thousand seven hundred and threescore and fifteen shekels. From whence it follows, that one talent contained three thousand shekels; and that it could not contain less, in the days of *Amaziah*, is pretty evident, from the account left us in 2 *Chron.* xxv. 6. of his having hired an hundred thousand mighty men of valour out of *Israel*, for an hundred talents of silver. If the talent had then contained less than three thousand shekels, what had been the hire of each of these soldiers?—And the history of *Gebazi*, *Hezekiah*, and many other passages of the *Old Testament*, plainly prove the talent to have been of a considerable weight.

ANOTHER plain point is, that *David* must have left immense treasures for building the temple, from the vast number of workmen employed and maintained for that service, for eleven years: four years in preparing the materials, and seven in putting them together.

HIRAM's servants, hired at the rate of twenty thousand measures of wheat, and twenty thousand measures of barley, and twenty thousand baths of wine, and twenty thousand baths of oil, year by year; thirty thousand hewers of wood, in *Lebanon* (ten thousand of them in constant employment); seventy thousand bearers of burdens, and fourscore thousand hewers of large and costly stones in the mountains; stones of ten cubits, and stones of eight cubits, sawed with

with saws, and joined with unparalleled exactness; and three thousand six hundred overseers of the work; that is, overseers of those who prepared materials for it; besides *five hundred and fifty, which bare rule over the people that wrought in the work* (says the text, 1. *Kings* ix. 23.); that is, which oversaw the execution of it; and twenty-four thousand *Levites*, appointed to set it forward, 1 *Chron.* xxiii. 4. And to all these the workers of precious stones, of gold, and silver, and metals of all kinds. What vast sums of money must have circulated through *Jerusalem*, from the wages of so many men every year! And how prodigious must the quantity of gold and silver, left by *David*, be, when this treasure (for this only can account for it) enabled *Solomon* to give gold and silver in *Jerusalem*, as stones; as the sacred text informs us he did (2<sup>d</sup> *Chron.* i. 15.)! Add to this, the immense quantity of solid gold, which covered the intire inside of the porch, the *holy*, and *holy of holies*, and the upper chambers\*; the ark, the mercy-seat, the cherubims, the altar of incense, and ten tables of shewbread; the ten candlesticks, and utensils of all kinds, for the service of the temple, such as dishes, cups, &c. which *Josephus* computes to have been no less than four hundred and forty thousand, of that metal; besides many utensils expressly said in the Scriptures to be of gold, such

\* *Josephus* tells us, (*Antiq.* lib. viii. cap. 3.) that the temple had another building over it, equal to it in its measures. And therefore we may fairly conclude, that the *upper chambers* here spoken of, were the chambers of that building.

as snuffers, lamps, tongs, and spoons, which *Josephus* takes no notice of; and besides all those of silver, which were thirteen hundred and forty thousand.

ANOTHER plain point is, that the sacred writers were very careful and exact, in the accounts left us, of the quantities of money contributed towards this work; when they descend even to the number of drachms contributed above the number of talents. Nor is there the least ground for suspecting any error to have crept into the text, or alteration to have ever been made in the numeral words, denoting these quantities.

ANOTHER plain point is, that the accounts left us of the earlier ages of the world, sufficiently evince them to have abounded with gold. And hence, as some learned men think, was derived the fable of the *golden age*. Hence the accounts left us of *Midas*, and *Cræsus*\*, whose treasures of gold (to say nothing of silver) were infinite; of *Saluces* and *Esuboses*†, kings of *Colchis*, who had intire chambers of gold, beams, and posts, and pillars of silver. Hence the antient *Arabs*, those of *Arabia Felix* particularly, whose gold was purest, and in the greatest quantities, (as *Diodorus Siculus* informs us, *lib. iii.*) bartered gold for iron. And the *Macrobiani*, a people of *Ethiopia*, bound their slaves in chains

\* Of whom *Pliny* says, That they possessed an infinite quantity of it: *in infinitum possiderunt*, *lib. xxiii. cap. 3.*

† *Pliny*, *ibid.*



of gold, *Herodotus*, lib. iii. And, above all, hence those treasures of *Sardanapalus* \*, which, from *Ctesias*'s account of them, are almost incredible. The mines of the earth were then virgin, (as *Pliny* observes) and many rivers gloried in golden sands, whose wealth hath long since been exhausted; and therefore we are not to judge of the wealth of those ages by our own present poverty.

A N O T H E R point, which must be confessed, is this: that after *David* had finished his palace, and other buildings in *Jerusalem*, which was early in his reign, he made no considerable expence, that we know of, to the end of it; for, as to the maintenance of armies, which makes the great expence of other princes, I think it seems agreed among the learned, that his cost him, in the ordinary course of things, nothing: each of the tribes supplying and supporting their own monthly courses; and in all cases of extraordinary levies, each man's portion of the great spoils taken from the enemy, did more than compensate for their pay: so that, if *David* had any sure sources or funds of wealth, he had great opportunities of amassing, and treasuring it up.

T H E next point, then, to be inquired into, is, What those sources were, from whence it was possible for *David* to drain so much wealth? And these are confessedly four: husbandry, war, trade, and tribute.

\* Who is supposed, by some learned men, to have been king of *Nineveh*, at the time of *Jonah*'s preaching.



IT is well known, that the wealth of the earlier ages originally consisted in the plenty and goodness of the creatures and fruits of the earth; from the sale of which arose, in after-ages, their artificial wealth. Nor can it be denied, that *David* might have abounded in this natural wealth, from the advantage of a country remarkably fruitful, and blessed, beyond all others, in a rich soil, and happy climate: and that he neglected no means to improve these advantages, may fairly, I think, be collected from the account left us, (1 *Chron.* xxvii. 25, &c.) of the proper and distinct officers appointed by him, over his treasures and store-houses, of all sorts; in cities, fields, villages, and castles; over the tillage of the earth, over the culture of the vineyards, and over their increase for the wine cellars; over the olive-trees, and sycamore-trees\*, in the low plains; and over the cellars of oil; over the herds that fed in *Sharon*, and over the herds in the valleys; over the camels, over the asses, and over the flocks.

FROM hence it is natural and obvious to infer, that *David* had a proper attention to all the parts and branches of husbandry. And it is easy to imagine, what an immense flow of wealth might be derived from this single source, in the course of thirty or forty years; in a rich country, part bordering, and part extended, upon a sea-coast, [where the trade and wealth of the whole world then centred,

\* Or, as the *Vulgate* interprets the original word, *figeta*, fig-yards.

THE next source of *David's* wealth, was war; which some learned men have imagined to be so rich a one, as were singly sufficient to account for all the wealth *David* left behind him.

As the eastern nations abounded in gold, it is sufficiently evident, from the earliest accounts left us of those nations, that they abounded in ornaments at least of that metal, when they went to battle. This is apparent from the eighth chapter of *Judges*; from whence we learn, that the *Midianites* not only wore earrings of gold themselves, but likewise adorned, with chains of gold, the necks of their camels. We learn also, from *Numbers* xxxi. that, when *Israel* first conquered the *Midianites*, the captains of thousands, and captains of hundreds, brought an oblation to God, of the spoil taken from the enemy, and such as every man amongst them had gotten, (*ver.* 50. and 53.) jewels of gold, chains and bracelets, rings, ear-rings, and tablets; making in the whole sixteen thousand seven hundred and fifty shekels. It is true, that as they took the spoil of the whole country, cities, castles, men and women, but a small part of this treasure can be placed to the score of the men slain in battle. But it is as true, that if the *Israelite* men of war, who then went to battle, offered only the five hundredth part of their share of the gold taken from *Midian*, as they offered only the five hundredth part of the beeves, asses, and sheep; the treasure of gold then taken in that country amounted, in the whole, to a very great sum; for but half of the

whole fell to their share. And if this one victory brought in so great a treasure, we may easily imagine, what immense wealth must be raised from *David's* many victories over nations much richer.

BUT, besides the personal ornaments worn by those who went to battle, it is beyond all doubt, that the eastern nations always adorned their weapons, and utensils of war, with the richest metals. And in those nations where gold abounded, and iron was little known, there is no question but the weapons themselves were of gold: as *Pliny* gives us to understand, that those of the antient *Gauls* were. And when we learn from the history of *David*, that the *Syrians*, whom he subdued, and slew in such vast multitudes, wore shields of gold, can we doubt, whether their quivers, handles of their swords, &c. were not of the same metal? He was victorious, in about twenty battles, over the richest enemies in the world, from the *Red-sea*, to beyond *Mount Libanus*; and from the *Euphrates*; to the *Mediterranean sea*. To what an incredible sum must the personal spoils, the rich arms, the military chests, and the gods of gold and silver\*, (always carried to battle with them) of such infinite multitudes, amount! And, in all probability, the spoils of their cities

\* *Psal. cxv. 4. Their idols are silver and gold. And Psal. cxxxv. 15. As for the images of the heathen, they are but silver and gold.* And we learn from the eighth and seventeenth chapters of the book of *Judges*, that, when the *Israelites* fell into the heathen idolatry, they also made them images of gold and silver.

and countries, to a much greater. To say nothing of the spoils taken from the *Philistines*, *Amalekites*, and others, even before he came to the crown.

THE next source of *David's* wealth, was trade.

SOLOMON, we know, made no conquests : yet had he two ports upon the *Red-sea* ; *Eloth*, and *Ezion-geber*, in the land of *Edom*. *David* conquered *Edom*, about the time that he subdued the *Syrians*, 2 *Sam.* viii. 14. Consequently, those ports, and perhaps others, were in his hands. And therefore we may easily credit *Eupolemus* \*, when he tells us, that *David* sent ships with miners to *Urphe*, an island in the *Red-sea*, which had mines of gold : a relation, which is sufficiently confirmed by the account left us, of *David's* giving three thousand talents of gold, his own private property, pure gold of *Ophir*, (which doubtless is the *Urphe* of *Eupolemus*) to the building of the temple. Nor is it any way probable, that he had no share in the trade of the *Mediterranean*, when such a length of its richest trading coast was in his own hands. What profits he derived from these branches of trade, is impossible to say ; but I think it highly probable, from the nature of the thing, that they were very considerable, and, possibly, immense. But whether his trade were so, or no, it is undoubted, that his tribute was.

\* Euseb. Præpar. lib. ix.



SOLOMON had no wars, made no conquests, or acquisitions of territory \*; except that of the single city of *Gezer*, conquered for him, and bestowed upon him, by *Pharaoh*. And therefore *David's* tributary revenues will best be estimated by those of *Solomon*. And what those were, may be estimated two ways: first, From the accounts left us of the expences he made: and, secondly, From the particular mention made of the revenues paid in to him annually.

As to the first of these: If we suppose the expences of *David's* and *Solomon's* tables to have been exactly the same, (which most certainly they were not) and estimate only the surplus expences of *Solomon*, in his buildings, his cities, his houses, and their furniture, his women, his horses, and chariots, (which would require volumes to explain) we shall soon be satisfied, to what an immense sum they must amount; and consequently, what an incredible sum *David* must have saved and amassed, by his œconomy, in the course of so many years.

IN the next place: his tributes may be estimated from the richness and extent of the dominions subject to him; *Edom*, all the *Arabias*, and *Syrias*, both on this, and the other side of *Euphrates*†, and the *Palestine* coast.

THE mines of *Punon* or *Phinon*, in *Edom*, as those of *Palestine*, hinted at by *Moses*, *Deut.*

\* It is indeed said, 2 *Chron.* viii. 3. That he went to *Hamath-zobab*, and prevailed against it; but this I take to be rather the recovery of a revolted city, than a new conquest.

† 2 *Sam.* x. 16, 19.

xxxiii. were famed even to the days of the christian martyrs, condemned to them. The *Arabias*, *Pliny* calls the richest nations\*. And we have already seen, from *Diodorus Siculus*, that *Arabia Felix* yielded the purest gold, and in the greatest quantity. And, as to the *Syrians*, their riches will best be estimated by the golden shields of *Hadadezer's* army. Here then are funds enough of wealth, sufficient for any demand. And yet *David* certainly had others, as appears from the accounts of *Solomon's* annual income, found in 1 *Kings* x. 14, 15. viz. *Six hundred threescore and six talents of gold, besides that he had of the merchant-men, and of the traffick of the spice merchants, and of all the kings of Arabia, and of the governors of the country.*

THAT *David*, then, had sources enough for all the treasure he left behind him, is, I think, out of all doubt.

IF it be objected, That this expence is disproportioned to the work; I answer, first, That no man I ever met with, except *Vilalpandus*, (and such as think after him) hath ever computed the vastness of the work: nor will any man, I believe, ever conceive a right idea of it, who doth not carefully consider what he (and *Lami* after him) had said upon that subject. In the mean time, let any man but think of the treasures of fruit, wood, incense, corn, wine and oil, (to omit a thousand other things) annually deposited

\* *Gentes ditissimæ*, lib. vi. cap. 28.

in the temple; and the vast number of *priests*, *Levites*, guards, porters, attendants, and officers of all kinds, lodged in it—and I am sure he will not think all *Vilalpandus's* cellarages more than sufficient for the one; nor all his apartments more than necessary for the other.

IN the next place: We are not to imagine, that all the stone and wood, hewn for that service, were expended upon it; for we are expressly told, that *Solomon made cedars to be in Jerusalem as the sycamores, that are in the vales for abundance.* And we may be well assured, that none but the very choice of both kinds, were used in the temple. And these, perhaps, were not more than one half of the whole.

BUT there are two points of the last importance, towards reconciling and determining this controversy, which none of the critics, that I have met with, have ever considered.

THE first is, that, in all their computations of expence, no allowance hath been made for the precious stones, with which the inside of the temple was adorned (such as diamonds, rubies, &c.); and which, if they then bore any proportion to the price they bear now, will sufficiently account for any expence that can well be imagined. And therefore, if we should agree with the learned *Brerewood*, that *David* left treasure enough to build the walls of the body of the temple of solid silver, and roof it with gold, yet when we consider what great portions of the one, and immense masses of the other, might go to the purchase of one single precious

precious stone, we cannot take upon us to pronounce any sum more than sufficient for such an expence.

THE next point of great importance to reconcile this controversy, is, That, in fact, all the treasure, left by *David*, was not expended upon the building of the temple. This appears clearly, from the seventh chapter of the first book of *Kings*, verse 51. where it is expressly said, *So was ended all the work that king Solomon made for the house of the Lord: and Solomon brought in the things which David his father had dedicated; even the silver and the gold, and the vessels, did he put among the treasures of the house of the Lord.*

I THINK it plain, that when *David* is said to have prepared for the house of the LORD an hundred thousand talents of gold, and a thousand thousand talents of silver, &c. the whole of his treasure, whether in coin, or otherwise, is there recounted: and that there remained a surplussage of that provision, to be deposited in the treasures of the temple, after the work was finished, is evident from the passage last quoted.



## C H A P. XX.

*Adonijah sets up as Heir apparent to the Throne, and asserts his Claim to it. Upon hearing of which, DAVID causes Solomon to be anointed King.*

DAVID was now far advanced in years, and the infirmities of age were fallen heavy upon him. The strength of nature was so far abated in him, that cloaths could not keep him warm in his bed. His physicians therefore advised, That a fair and youthful virgin should be sought for, who might lie in his bosom, and cherish his vital heat; the natural warmth of a young, healthful, human body, being (as physicians observe) best fitted for that end, both in kind and degree.

IF it be asked, How the beauty of the person to be employed to this purpose, was concerned in *David's* health? I answer, That the beauty here required is, evidently, beauty of complexion: which, as it indicates the health and temperament of the body, might be of importance in this case. Possibly too, as *David* was very beautiful himself, they sought for some person of complexion and constitution likest to his own; and of consequence best suited, and most congenial to it. And therefore the cavillers at this part of *David's* conduct are as far from being able naturalists in this respect, as they are casuists in many others. And I will be bound to say,  
that

that if *David* had taken any other method of recovering, and keeping up, the vital flame; by wine, for instance, high diets, and cordials, or any other imaginable way; they would have found all those methods at least as exceptionable, as this. *Abishag the Shunamite* was found, and thought proper for this purpose; and was, accordingly, admitted into the number of *David's* wives, but not known by him.

CONCUBINAGE was not then deemed criminal: and it will, I hope, be thought no very wild paradox, to venture to surmise, that a modest man can, with less reluctance, suffer his infirmities to be relieved by a wife, than by any other mortal. And therefore I greatly fear, that those gentlemen who quarrel with *David* upon this score, are little refined, either in that virtue, or the more elegant decencies of life.

ADONIJAH, *David's* eldest son after *Absalom*, (but by another wife) beautiful too, and popular like him, took advantage of his father's infirm state; assumed the airs, and set up the equipage, of heir apparent to the throne: *He prepared chariots and horsemen, and fifty men to run before him*; and gave out openly, that he would be king: although he could not but know, that *Solomon* was designed for that dignity, both by *David*, and GOD himself.

DAVID had nobody to blame but himself, for this misconduct in his son: it was his own excessive indulgence, which inspired this extravagance: for the text tells us, that *his father had not displeased him at any time, in saying, Why hast*

*hast thou done so?* Strange weakness in parents, and cruelty to their children, to suffer them to become incorrigible in error, or inveterate in vice, rather than restrain and check them, whilst correction is kindness!

ADONIJAH had gained two very considerable men to his party; *Joab*, the captain of the host, and *Abiathar* the priest: and, when things were sufficiently prepared, summoned his partizans to a great entertainment, (possibly under the pretence of a sacrifice) near the stone *Zobelet*, by the famed fountain of *En-rogel*, not far from *Jerusalem*: where, in the midst of their festivity and mirth, they scrupled not to treat him as their king. But *Nathan* the prophet was steady to the appointments of Providence, pronounced by his own mouth; and accordingly informed *Bathsheba* of the design carried on against her son; advising her to lose no time in acquainting the king of it, in order to prevent it; and letting her know, that he himself would quickly second and support her upon that head. *Bathsheba* obeyed the kind monition, waited upon the king in the instant, and put him in mind of his promise to her, confirmed by a solemn oath, that *Solomon*, her son, should reign after him: whereas in reality *Adonijah* then reigned, although his majesty knew nothing of it; and was, at that moment, openly entertaining his adherents at a great feast, with *Joab* and *Abiathar* at their head—adding, that the eyes of all *Israel* were then upon his majesty, to know whom he would appoint to succeed him in his throne.



throne. Which if he should fail to do, *It shall come to pass, (says she) when my lord the king shall sleep with his fathers, that I, and my son Solomon, shall be counted offenders.* Whilst she spake, *Nathan* came in to the king; and, doing obeisance, asked, If he had appointed *Adonijah* his successor, without acquainting him with his purpose? And then proceeded to inform him of the measures taken by *Adonijah*, to raise himself to the throne.

WHEN *Nathan* came into the king's presence, *Bathsheba* retired: as, *Pliny* tells us, *Cæcilius Rufus's* wife did, upon the admission of any intimate friend to her husband; although well fitted to share in all his secrets.

As soon as *Nathan* had done speaking, *David*, without making him any answer, immediately ordered *Bathsheba* to be called in to him again. He was impatient to remove her disquiet, and give her intire satisfaction in her complaint; and therefore, as soon as ever she appeared, instantly renewed his oath to her, that as he had solemnly sworn, that *Solomon* should sit upon his throne, he would perform his promise to her that very day. Upon the hearing of which, *Bathsheba* (saith the sacred writer) *bowed with her face to the earth, and did reverence to the king, and said, Let my Lord king David live for ever.*

NATHAN had now retired from the king's presence, upon *Bathsheba's* approach, as she had done before, upon his; but was quickly called back again, with *Zadok* the priest, and *Benaiah*



the son of *Jekoida*, captain of the *Cherethites* and *Pelethites*, whom *David* commanded to take *Solomon* his son, and set him upon his own mule, and attend him with his own life-guard, and conduct him to *Gihon*; where *Zadok* the priest, and *Nathan* the prophet, should anoint him king over *Israel*, and then proclaim him king by sound of trumpet: after which they were to return to *Jerusalem*, and place him upon the throne.

To this command *Benaiah* answered, *Amen*; and added a prayer, That *GOD* would ratify his choice, support *Solomon* as he did *David*, and exalt his throne above the throne of *David*.

ACCORDINGLY *Solomon* was immediately mounted upon *David's* mule, and attended by *Zadok* and *Nathan*, the *Cherethites* and *Pelethites*, and other officers of the king, to *Gihon*; and there anointed king, with the sacred oil deposited in the tabernacle. And they blew the trumpet, and all the people shouted out, *God save king Solomon!* And all the people (says the text) came up after him, and the people piped with pipes, and rejoiced with great joy, so that the earth rent with the sound of them.

THE noise of this rejoicing reached *Adonijah*, and his guests, towards the close of their entertainment: and *Joab*, upon hearing the sound of the trumpet, cried out, *Wherefore is this noise of the city being in an uproar?* And, as he asked the question, *Jonathan* the son of *Abiathar* the priest came, in the instant, with the unwelcome news of *David's* having made  
*Solomon*

*Solomon* king, with the circumstances already related; and added, that he was then actually upon the throne, receiving the compliments and congratulations of *Israel*: moreover, that *David's* servants had also congratulated him upon that occasion; beseeching *GOD*, that he would make the name of *Solomon* better than his name, and the throne of *Solomon* greater than his throne: upon the hearing of which, *David* bowed himself upon the bed, in prayer and thanksgiving to *GOD*, who had given him a son, to sit upon his throne, under the singular satisfaction of being himself witness to the honour and bounty bestowed upon him.

UPON hearing this surprising relation, *Adonijah*, and his guests, struck with terror, (for nothing is more cowardly or confused, than an anticipated rebel) quickly dispersed. *Adonijah*, conscious of his crime, fled to the altar, and the rest to their several houses.

NEWS was quickly brought to *Solomon*, That *Adonijah* had laid hold on the horns of the altar, and would not stir thence, till *Solomon* should swear to spare his life: upon hearing of which, *Solomon* immediately declared, That if he behaved himself, for the future, as a worthy man, an hair of his head should not be touched; but, if wickedness were found in him, he should die.

UPON this assurance, *Adonijah* waited upon the king, and submitted himself to him: and *Solomon* sent him to his own house in peace.

## C H A P. XXI.

*A short digression, being an Essay upon  
the Character of Bathsheba.*

UPON perusing the history of *David's* fall, I found almost every commentator I met with, severe upon the character of *Bathsheba*: some treating her (at least in their insinuations) as a light and lewd woman; others, as swayed by ambition in her commerce with *David*; and all, as an hypocrite, in mourning for her husband.

ON the other hand, I found her, after this, the wife of a great and wise king; the mother of a great and wise king; and remotely the mother even of the MESSIAH. Upon further inquiry, I found her honoured by that great and wise king, her husband, with the surest marks of true friendship and esteem, in the decline of life, when passion could make no part of their commerce. I found her honoured, in a very distinguished manner, by that great and wise king her son\*, when he was in full possession of the supreme power; and consequently when no suspicion of interest could abate the merit of his duty†. I found that father commanding his  
son

\* 1 Kings ii. 19. *And the king rose up to meet her, and bowed himself unto her, and sat down on his throne and caused a seat to be set for the king's mother; and she sat on his right-hand,*

† If it be urged, that *Solomon's* subsequent behaviour to his mother, in relation to her petition in favour of *Adonijah*, is not respect-

son to listen to the wise and salutary monitions of his mother : and I found precepts, said to be of that mother, and recorded by that son, perfectly tallying with those monitions. And from thence I concluded, as all antient critics, and most moderns have done, that the mother of *Lemuel* was *Bathsheba*. Is it possible, I then meditated with myself, that such a father, and such a son, could be deceived in the character of that woman, for a course of years ? Or, if they were, could the eye of Providence mistake her ?

I THEN revolved her history from the beginning, with the utmost care and exactness I was capable of ; and seriously acknowledge, (it may be, to the shame of my sagacity) that I never could find any thing in it, on which to ground the least censure or suspicion of levity or lewdness, of hypocrisy or ambition.

IT was not her fault, that she was fair ; it was no crime, in an hot clime, and in the close of the day, to bathe herself, for coolness and cleanliness, if not for legal pollutions. Suppose she did this in her garden, (which I verily believe she did not) the history of *Susanna*, a lady no way blemished in her character of chastity, shews this practice not uncusomary in that country, nor any way accounted criminal. Doth it appear, that she was seduced by inordinate

respectful ; I answer, by owning, that he there breaks out into a passion, which neither became him as a king, or as a son : but it must at the same time be admitted, that this passion was subsequent to a treatment of his mother full of distinguished respect and esteem.



appetite, or by any views of ambition, to violate her duty to God, and her husband? Not in the least. Had these been her incitements, quite other measures had been taken; the intercourse had then been transacted in secrecy, and by a single messenger. The truth is, *David's* passions were too unruly to brook delay: the text tells us, *he sent messengers, and took\* her* (there was no time allowed either for temptations or terms); and had criminal commerce with her. More than this, we know not; but that *she sanctified herself from her pollution, and returned to her house*—In the original it is, *And she sanctifying herself, &c.* And it is remarkable, that this action is expressed in a form of conjugation, which implies diligence and solicitude. Now, suppose this word to signify no more than her care and anxiety to be purified from the legal pollution of her commerce with *David*, is there no presumption of religious impressions, of a sense and abhorrence of guilt, in that solicitude? Considering it merely as a ceremonial, *David* was bound to it, as well as she: Why then are the Scriptures silent upon this head, with regard to him? Certainly they would not, if he had expressed the same solicitude. The reader will make his own inferences.

It is evident enough, that *David's* passion was not indulged to satiety, nor followed with aversion; he forced her not from him, as *Ammon* did *Tamar*. Had pleasure or ambition been

\* A word that sometimes implies *force*, in the Scriptures, and always an incapacity of resistance in the thing taken.

her purpose, she could not have wanted pretences, sufficiently plausible, for continuing it longer; perhaps for going no more to her own house.

WHAT followed next? *Bathsheba* found herself pregnant: Did she take that occasion to tempt *David* anew to continue or repeat the criminal commerce? (Did ever a fairer occasion offer?) Quite otherwise; she seems carefully to have kept out of his sight; and only sent to let him know her condition: Could modesty do more? For my own part, I see not the least traces of levity or lewdness in this conduct: I imagine I see in it the sure marks of injured and distressed innocence.

AND here let me be allowed to observe, that this conduct in *David* and *Bathsheba* is perhaps as strong an instance of refined virtue as ever was known: A man seduced by too strong a temptation to one act of guilt, and from that moment religiously abstaining from one repetition of it (the liking and the desire still continuing); nay, when he knew it could not be aggravated, with regard to *Uriah*; when he knew, that *Bathsheba* was with child! Would to GOD, that all or any of those, who insult *David's* fall, could glory in any thing like this abstinence and self-denial! For my own part, I own, I have no idea of any thing more refined in religion, or more heroic in virtue. To be above the reach of temptation, is to be more than the sons of *Adam*; but religiously and

steadily to abstain from every occasion of it, is the surest character of the sons of GOD.

IT must be owned, there is something very surprising in *Uriah's* never once seeing his wife, when *David* sent for him to court. But, as the sacred writers shew this only in the light of an heroic resolution in him, I shall not take upon me to contemplate upon it in any other but this, That the hand of GOD was evidently in it, in order to bring *David's* secret guilt to public infamy, for reasons best known to infinite Wisdom. All that I have more to add, is only to observe, that, if *Bathsheba* was innocent, (as I verily believe she was) the providence of GOD was singularly gracious to her, in guarding her from the distress of such an interview.

IT is, I think, agreed on all hands, that *Bathsheba* had no share in her husband's murder, nor was in any degree privy to it; she probably thought he fell by the common fate of war: and therefore, when the Scriptures inform me, that she mourned for him upon the news of his death, I cannot refine so far, as to pronounce she did not do so, seriously and sincerely. *Uriah* was a brave man; and if he behaved himself with the same honour and fidelity to his wife, as he did to his prince, his country, and his religion, (and surely the presumption, that he did, is strong in his favour) he was well intitled to her highest esteem. To injure, or do indignity to, such a man, even by force, were matter of sufficient concern to a generous and an upright spirit; and to reflect upon having  
done

done it, unforgiven, the greatest aggravation of distress.

WHEN the time of her mourning was over, *David* took her to his house, and *she became his wife* : had he deemed her a light, or a libertine woman, he would, in all probability, not have placed her in the palace ; or placed her there under a lower character. Nor can I imagine why he should distinguish her in this manner, unless from a principle of repairing, to the utmost of his power, the injury he had done her. And it is remarkable, that there is no mention made of any other wife taken by *David* after this (except *Abishag*, who was not taken to any of the purposes of marriage) ; nor does it at all appear from the Scriptures, that he had any other child, by any other woman, after this\*.

To all this may be added, That, when GOD sent *Nathan* to rebuke *David* for his guilt, there was no share of the guilt charged upon *Bathsheba*. Now we learn from the history of *Ahab* and *Jezebel*, that when two persons shared in the same guilt, and GOD sent his prophets to rebuke it, it was not the way of those prophets to reprove one criminal, and leave the other uncensured. *Jezebel*, who contrived the murder of *Naboth*, had indeed the most signal share in the judgments of GOD denounced against it ; but

\* It is indeed said, 1 *Chron.* iii. 5. *These four by Bath-sbua, the daughter of Ammiel.* Then immediately follows, *Ibbar also, &c.* without mention of any other mother. Why then might not these be by the same ?



*Ahab*, who concurred \* in it, had also his share to the full. Now *Nathan* was so far from censuring *Bathsheba*, that he places her rather in a light of innocence: and indeed what can be an apter emblem of innocence, than a *little lamb*? And, for my own part, I shall not pretend to see more clearly into this affair than *Nathan* did.

BUT what completes the character of *Bathsheba*, is her own advice to her son, and his encomium upon her (*Prov.* xxxi.): the first shews her a wise woman; and the second, an excellent wife, in every circumstance of that character †. *Solomon* tells us, in the fourth chapter of his *Proverbs*, at the third verse, that he was *tender and only beloved in the sight of his mother*: and the beginning of the lecture to *Lemuel*, in this chapter, (*Prov.* xxxi. 2.) where his mother breaks

\* *I Kings* xxi.

† I know some modern critics have, contrary to the unanimous judgment and tradition of all antiquity, raised some scruples upon this head; as if *Lemuel* were not *Solomon*, but some other king, they know not who. I have examined them, with all the care and candour I am capable of; and conclude upon the whole, that their objections were such, as my readers of best understanding would be little obliged to me, either for retailing or refuting—I shall barely mention that of greatest weight: it is thus; That his mother, thrice in this chapter, when she calls him her son, makes use of the word *bar*, to express it by; a word no-where used throughout the whole Old Testament, except in the second *Psalms* at the twelfth verse. This then is the strength of the objection—That *Solomon* cannot be *Lemuel*, because *Lemuel's* mother calls him son, by a word which no sacred writer ever made use of before, except *Solomon's* father, upon a like occasion. Besides, the very name sufficiently shews *Lemuel* to be *Solomon*, for *Lemuel* signifies *belonging to God*: And to whom can this possibly be applied so properly as to *Solomon*, to whom God expressly declared he would be a father? 2 *Sam.* vii. 14.

out, at once, into such excess of tenderness, *What, my son?—the son of my womb?—the son of my vows?*—is, to me, a fine comment upon that passage.

DAVID had admonished his son (*Prov. vi. 20, &c.\**) *to keep the commandment of his father, and not forsake the law of his mother, &c.* For (*ver. 23.*) *the commandment (says he) is a lamp, and the law is light, and reproofs of instruction are the ways of life, to keep thee from the evil woman*—And can there be a greater uniformity than betwixt that monition, and this; *Give not thy strength unto women, nor thy ways to that which destroyeth kings?* And may not the reproofs, that follow, justly be intitled reproofs of instruction?

WHEN these *reproofs of instruction* are recited, then follows a poem in praise of an accomplished woman: and surely nothing can be more natural than the judgments of the best critics upon it; that *Lemuel* here characterizes his mother, in a poem written in honour of her: and if, this mother be *Bathsheba*, as I think there is little doubt but it is, then is her conduct to *Uriah* fully justified, in these words: *The heart of her husband doth safely trust in her, so that he shall have no need of spoil.* This seems to me, peculiarly to characterize the prudent and faithful wife of a

\* As critics have considered the first nine chapters of the *Proverbs*, only as a preface to what is properly called the book of *Proverbs*, the attentive reader will find all the precepts, from the beginning of the fourth chapter to the end of the ninth, to be only recitals of *David's* instructions to his son *Solomon*.

generous soldier: the husband of such a wife was under no necessity of enriching himself by the vices of his profession; her frugal and prudent management of his affairs would undoubtedly do it: and who knows but this reflection might have been added to wipe off some aspersions cast upon *Bathsheba*? especially when we consider the words that immediately follow, which acquit her of any share in the guilt of his death: *She will do him good, and not evil, all the days of his life.*

IF these reasonings be right, (and I am greatly deceived, if they be not) then I think, far from vilifying the character of *Bathsheba*, her son may be fairly justified, in concluding of her, as he does, *ver. 29, &c. Many daughters have done virtuously, but thou excellest them all. Favour is deceitful, and beauty vain; but a woman that feareth the Lord, she shall be praised: give her of the fruit of her hands, and let her own works praise her in the gates.*

C H A P. XXII.

DAVID *calls an Assembly of his People, in which Solomon's Election to the Throne is confirmed. His Speech, and Thanksgiving to GOD, upon that Occasion. His last Instructions to his Son Solomon.*

WHETHER *David's* resentment at *Adonijah's* late attempt upon the crown, or the joy conceived by him at seeing his son *Solomon* seated upon the throne, and *God's* promises to him, and his own to *Bathsheba*, so happily fulfilled, roused him from his languor, and gave a new spring to his blood; or whether his disorder was one of those loads, under which languid nature sometimes labours, until, aided by exterior vital warmth, it is enabled to throw it off (instances of which are well known in the world, and famed in history); we cannot say: we are only informed thus far; That he recovered his strength and spirits to such a degree, before he died, as to be able to call an assembly of his people, and get his election of *Solomon* to the throne confirmed in it.

THIS assembly was composed of all orders and degrees of men of eminence in the nation, both civil and military: *David* (saith the text) *assembled all the princes of Israel, the princes of*  
the



*the tribes, and the captains of the companies that ministered to the king by course, and the captains over the thousands, and the captains over the hundreds, and the stewards over all the substance and possession of the king, and of his sons, with the officers, and with the mighty men, and with all the valiant men, into Jerusalem.*

WHEN they were convened, *David* addressed himself to them in a speech, the most natural and unlaboured of any I have ever met with; but at the same time, as every sentence in it flows clearly from the fulness of his heart, every thing he says affects and interests the hearer, and carries him directly into all the speaker's views.

TO do justice to this oration, I should transcribe it intire; but I chose rather to select some few passages from it, that so, by raising the unscriptural reader's curiosity, I may send him with more eagerness to the original.

IT is probable, that the king had a throne erected in the assembly, and that he and his son sat together upon it: although the sacred historian informs us no further, than that *David the king stood up upon his feet, and said—Hear me, my brethren, and my people.*

WHEN he had thus engaged their attention, by these kind compellations; he proceeds to tell them, That he had it in his heart to build an house of rest for the Ark of the covenant of the LORD, and for a foot-stool for his and their GOD; and had made preparations accordingly; but was expressly prohibited by GOD to proceed in the work, (because he had been a man  
of

of war, and had shed blood) who had chosen his son *Solomon* to carry it on, and complete it; with solemn assurances of establishing his throne, if he continued in his duty and obedience. And, forasmuch as the happiness of his people was nearly interested in his establishment, he proceeds to apply himself to them in the following manner:

*Now therefore, in the sight of all Israel, the congregation of the Lord, and in the audience of our God, keep, and seek for, all the commandments of the Lord your God; that ye may possess this good land, and leave it for an inheritance to your children after you, for ever.*

THEN turning to his son, with a noble apostrophe—*And thou, Solomon my son, know thou the God of thy father, and serve him with a perfect heart, and with a willing mind: for the Lord searcheth all hearts, and understandeth all the imaginations of the thoughts: if thou seek him, he will be found of thee; but if thou forsake him, he will cast thee off for ever. Take heed now: for the Lord hath chosen thee to build an house for the sanctuary: be strong, and do it.*

How strongly does he urge the obligations that lay upon him, to prosecute the work with all possible attention and application, from the distinguished honour done him by Almighty GOD, by his special designation of him to that noble office!

THEN *David* gave *Solomon* the plan of the whole work, with all its courts, treasuries, and apartments, all which he had by the Spirit;  
with

with a complete scheme of the whole temple service; courses of the priests, *Levites*, officers, and attendants of all kinds; with exact patterns of all instruments, vessels, and utensils, for every kind of service; together with sufficient quantities of the several metals, of which they were to be formed; gold by weight, for things of gold; and silver, for things of silver.

THIS done, *David* again exhorts his son to resolution and vigour, in carrying on the work; and assures him of the assistance both of the people and princes towards it.

THEN turning to his people, he tells them, That *Solomon* his son, whom alone GOD had chosen for this mighty undertaking, was young and tender, and the work great; for the palace was not for man, but the LORD GOD: That, as for himself, he had made the best preparations he could for it; gold and silver, brass and iron, and wood, and precious stones of all kinds and colours: moreover because he had set his affections upon the house of his GOD, he had, over and above all his other preparations, provided, of his own proper goods, *three thousand talents of pure gold of Ophir, and seven thousand talents of refined silver, to overlay the walls of the houses.* And when he had said this, he put the question directly to them, and asked, *Who amongst them was willing to consecrate his service that day unto the Lord?* Upon which, the chief men of the assembly contributed chearfully to the work; and made up, amongst them, five thousand talents of gold, and ten thousand drachms; and



of silver, ten thousand talents; and of brass, eighteen thousand talents; and one hundred thousand talents of iron; to which were added precious stones of various kinds, by all such as had them. *Then (saith the sacred historian) the people rejoiced; for they offered willingly to the Lord: and David the king also rejoiced with great joy. Wherefore David blessed the Lord before all the congregation: and David said, Blessed be thou, Lord God of Israel our father, for ever and ever.*

*Thine, O Lord, is the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty! For all that is in the heaven, and in the earth, is thine. Thine is the kingdom, O Lord, and thou art exalted as Head above all.*

*Both riches and honour come of thee, and thou reignest over all—And in thine hand it is, to make great, and to give strength unto all.*

*Now therefore, our God, we thank thee, and praise thy glorious Name.*

*But who am I, and what is my people, that we should be able to offer so willingly after this sort? for all things come of thee, and of thine own have we given thee. For we are strangers before thee, and sojourners, as were all our fathers: our days on the earth are as a shadow, and there is none abiding.*

*O Lord our God, all this store, that we have prepared to build thee an house for thine holy Name, cometh of thine own hand, and is all thine own.*



*I know also, my God, that thou triest the heart, and hast pleasure in uprightness.*

*As for me, in the uprightness of mine heart, I have willingly offered all these things: and now have I seen with joy thy people, which are present here, to offer willingly unto thee.*

*O Lord God of Abraham, Isaac, and Israel, our fathers, keep this for ever in the imagination of the thoughts of the heart of thy people, and prepare their heart unto thee.*

*And give unto Solomon my son a perfect heart to keep thy commandments, thy testimonies, and thy statutes; and to do all these things; and to build the palace, for the which I have made provision.*

*And David said to all the congregation, Now, bless the Lord your God.*

*And all the congregation blessed the Lord God of their fathers, and bowed their heads, and worshipped the Lord and the king.*

*And they sacrificed sacrifices unto the Lord, and offered burnt-offerings unto the Lord, on the morrow after that day; even a thousand bullocks, a thousand rams, and a thousand lambs, with their drink-offerings, and sacrifices in abundance for all Israel:*

*And did eat and drink before the Lord, on that day, with great gladness. And they made Solomon, the son of David, king, the second time; and anointed him unto the Lord, to be the chief governor, and Zadok to be priest.*

I CANNOT help adding, that when I lift up my eyes to heaven, the true fountain of all excellent

cellent endowments and dispositions; and contemplate the greatness of *David's* soul, the nobleness of his sentiments, and the humility of his heart, all calculated, conspiring, and bent upon the one great purpose of promoting the glory of GOD, and, in consequence of that, perpetuating the felicity of his people; I cannot help looking down upon all the other princes of the earth with pity\*.

DAVID seems to have survived but a very little while, after this great and signal transaction of his reign: but, before he expired, he sent for *Solomon*; told him his condition, That he was going the way of all the earth; and exhorted him to fortitude, and manly resolution, in the conduct of his life; and, well knowing, that true religion was the only solid support of true fortitude, solemnly charged him, with his dying breath, to pay a strict obedience to the commands of GOD, and continue steadfast in his duty to him; as he hoped for his protection and favour, and the continuance of his posterity upon the throne; as GOD had promised they should, *if they took heed to their way, to walk before him in truth, with all their heart, and with all their soul.*

HE next reminded him of *Joab's* disobedience to his own commands, in relation to *Absalom*, together with his repeated murders:

\* Particularly a late profligate prince of our own; who, instead of contributing to make *St. Paul's* church what the architect had designed it, the glory of his nation and capital, pinched forty thousand pounds from the fund assigned for it, to very shameful purposes.

308      *An Historical Account of* B. 4.  
and charged him not to let them go unpunished;  
a charge as wise, as it was just! Nor did he  
forget, even in the article of death, the gratitude  
he owed to *Barzillai the Gileadite*; but intreated  
his son to renew it in his posterity, with the  
distinguished honour of letting them be of those  
who eat at his own table: and concluded with  
advising him, in relation to *Shimei*; whom al-  
though he himself had pardoned, his son should  
not hold him guiltless; but (as the text is gene-  
rally understood) *bring his hoar head to the grave*  
*with blood*. An advice, greatly, but, as I think,  
unjustly, censured as revengeful and cruel; as  
shall be shewn hereafter.

---

## CH A P. XXIII.

### *Some Account of the Temple-Service.* *DAVID's Death.*

HAVING, in the last chapter, mentioned  
the scheme of the temple-service, deli-  
vered by *David* to *Solomon*, together with the  
plans of the buildings, and pattern of the uten-  
sils; I hope I shall be indulged, in endeavouring  
to give the common reader some idea of that  
service, as far as I can collect it from the sacred  
writings; referring my readers, of more curio-  
sity, to such as have written professedly upon  
that subject.

DAVID had, in the preceding part of his  
reign, settled the service of the tabernacle, both  
at *Gibeon* and *Jerusalem*; but as those scenes  
were



B. 4. *the Life of King DAVID.* 309

were small, and the necessary attendants few, another regulation was now necessary for the service of the temple, which was incomparably more magnificent. Accordingly this regulation was made, and established by GOD himself, as we learn from 2 *Chron.* xxix. 25. where we are informed, that when *Hezekiah* restored the service of the temple, *he set the Levites in the house of the Lord, with cymbals, with psalteries, and with harps, according to the commandment of David, and of Gad the king's seer, and Nathan the prophet: for so was the commandment of the Lord by his prophets.*

BUT we must take this matter higher, in order to form a clearer conception of it.

LEVI had three sons, *Gershon, Kohath, and Merari.* From the second of these were descended *Moses* and *Aaron.* *Aaron*, and his descendants, were set apart and consecrated for the priesthood, by the special appointment of Almighty GOD\*. And the rest of their brethren, the other descendants of *Levi*, were appointed to attend them, and minister unto them, in things sacred. And, among these, were the sons of *Moses*; without any distinction or pre-eminence above their brethren, the other descendants of *Levi*: which, most certainly, was not the work either of human ambition, pride, or policy. Nay more; we hear of no honour or office of dignity, borne by any one of them, for about five hundred years; until *David* made

\* *Exod.* xxviii.



*Shebuel* the son of *Gershon*, the son of *Moses*, ruler of the treasures; and set his brethren, by *Eliezer*, over the treasures of the dedicated things (1 *Chron.* xxvi. 24, 25, 26.).

THE peculiar office of *Aaron*, and his descendants, is thus explained (1 *Chron.* xxiii. 13.): *And Aaron was separated, that he should sanctify the most holy things, he and his sons for ever; to burn incense before the Lord, to minister unto him, and to bless in his name for ever.* And we learn from many parts of the Scripture, that a principal part of this ministration was the offering up of sacrifices, and blowing with trumpets over them, *on the days of their gladness*, and new moons (*Numb.* x. 10.).

THE several parts and branches of the *Levitical* office are summed up, 1 *Chron.* xxiii. at the 28th and following verses. From whence we learn, that it was their business to wait upon the sons of *Aaron*, for the service of the house of the LORD, in all its parts. To them belonged the care, and the cleansing, of all its courts, chambers, and vessels of all kinds; the keeping of all its treasures, and the standards of all measure and size, and all things necessary for the burnt offerings and meat-offerings; the provision of the shew-bread, fine flour, unleavened bread, incense, &c. It was their business to attend upon the morning and evening service of the temple, to celebrate the praises of GOD, and give him thanks: some with voices, and some with musical instruments, of various kinds. In one word, they were the guards, treasurers, stewards,

## B. 4. *the Life of King DAVID.* 311

stewards, choir, band of music, and chamberlains, of this great palace. And the *Netthinims* ministered under them, as menial servants, in all the meaner offices.

By the appointment of *Moses*, the *Levites* were numbered from thirty years\* old, and upwards, for the service of the tabernacle. And, according to that regulation, their numbers and appointments stood thus, in the days of *David*: Their whole number was thirty-eight thousand; of which twenty-four thousand were to set forward the work of the house of the LORD; six thousand were officers and judges; four thousand were to be the guards† of the temple; and four thousand were to praise the LORD, with the musical instruments, which *David* had invented for that purpose: but as the service of the temple required a vast many more hands, than the service of the tabernacle, by *David's* last regulation, (doubtless authorized by divine appointment) the *Levites* were separated for the service of GOD, from twenty years old, and upwards; which added considerably to the num-

\* There is a difficulty in this point, which should be reconciled: By the appointment in the fourth chapter of *Numbers*, verse the third, the *Levites* were to enter into the service of the tabernacle from thirty years and upwards; whereas, *Numb.* viii. 24. they are ordered to wait upon the service of the tabernacle, from twenty-five years old and upward. But this is reconciled by *Maimonides*, who says they were obliged to spend five years in learning the duties of their ministry, before they were admitted to minister in the court of the priests.

† So the word should be translated, which in our *English* version is interpreted *porters*.

bers now mentioned, in their several appointments and provinces.

*David*, not long before his death, gathered together all the princes of *Israel*, with the priests and the *Levites*; and, in their presence, divided the priests into twenty-four courses, by lot, under the principal men of *Aaron's* descendants, to be governors of the sanctuary, and governors of the house of *GOD*; and had them registered according to the order in which their lot fell, by *Shemaiah* the scribe, in the presence of the king and princes, and *Zadok* the priest, and *Ahimelech* the son of *Abiathar*\*; each course to pay a weekly attendance at the temple, in their turn. The other *Levites* he divided in the same manner, under the several heads of their families, and according to their several offices. And then, setting course against course, he made them cast lots for the order in which they were to officiate, without any regard to seniority or dignity; and also to determine what course of guards, singers, &c. should attend with the correspondent course of priests.

THIS institution carried one great national advantage with it (and possibly many more, not now to be recounted or conceived); inasmuch as this weekly circulation of priests and *Levites*, as well as the monthly one of the military men, enlarged acquaintance, diffused friendship, and circulated the civility and politeness of the court, and arts and elegance of the capital, together with religion, throughout the realm.

\* 1 Chron. xxiv. 6.



THE men skilled in song were found to be two hundred eighty-eight: and therefore, by this regulation, twelve of these were to stand with cymbals, psalteries, and harps, on common days, (and the whole number upon the great festivals) *every morning to thank and praise the Lord, and likewise at even\**: and were joined by at least one hundred and sixty-six of their brethren, who praised the LORD upon instruments of various sorts, on common days; and by at least four thousand, upon the great festivals.

WE learn from the first chapter of *St. Luke*, that, when the priest went into the temple to offer the incense, the whole multitude of the people were at their prayers without. And we learn from this regulation of *David's*, that when the anthem began, it was performed by twelve voices, accompanied at least by one hundred and sixty-six instruments.

IT is agreed, on all hands, that the number of singers in the temple must not be less than twelve; but might be increased as much as was thought proper; and must, in the ordinary course of things, have been increased; because the children of these singers, being bred to the profession of their parents, were admitted into the temple with them, to make the chorus more complete.

THE number of the particular kinds of musical instruments employed in the temple-service, is no where determined; but the *Jews* are of

\* 1 Chron. xxiii. 30.



opinion\*, that the trumpets could not be less than two, nor more than one hundred and twenty: not less, because of GOD's command, *Numb. x. 2.* to make two trumpets; nor more than one hundred and twenty, because no more were made use of at the dedication of the temple, *2 Chron. v. 12.*

THIS is a short, imperfect sketch of the divine worship instituted by *David*; as it was celebrated in its ordinary magnificence: a magnificence, which, even in this imperfect account of it, the greatest princes of our world are not now able to equal upon the greatest occasions! And as to that of the great festivals, not all the princes of *Europe*, combined, were able to come up to it.

DAVID well knew of what vast consequence the establishment of the public worship of God, in true piety and purity, was, to the virtue and felicity of a people; inasmuch as all religion depends upon it, and would, without it, absolutely fail, and cease from amongst men, in the compass of a few years: and therefore wisely judged it advisable to allure men to it, by all the advantages of a graceful, solemn, and delightful magnificence. And to this end, there is good ground to believe from the text, that the enlargement of the number of men, assigned to the several offices of religion, was the last public act of *David's* life, *1 Chron. xxiii. 27. †.*

\* See *Lightfoot de Ministerio Templi.*

† For by the last words of *David*, the Levites were numbered, from twenty years old and above.

B.4. *the Life of King DAVID.* 315

Blessed conclusion of a life gloriously employed, and ended! employed in chastising iniquity, in extirpating inveterate and incorrigible corruption, in enlarging his dominions to the bounds assigned them by Almighty GOD, in establishing his people in peace and happiness, and doing justice and judgment; but chiefly employed in propagating the glory of GOD, with ardent and incessant zeal! and ended in enlarging the dignity and magnificence of his worship with his last breath!

*Thus, in the style of the sacred writer, 1 Chron. xxix. 26, 27, 28. David, the son of Jesse, reigned over all Israel. And the time that he reigned over Israel, was forty years, seven years reigned he in Hebron, and thirty and three years reigned he in Jerusalem.*

*And he died in a good old age, full of days, riches, and honour: and Solomon his son reigned in his stead.*

HE died with the satisfaction of seeing his own son his successor, the wisest and the hope-fullest prince of the whole earth; and with the assurance of GOD's peculiar favour to his posterity; from whence he had already (in the clearest light of prophetic vision) seen \* the MESSIAH, the LORD of life, to arise; of whose dominion, and the increase of his government and glory, he well knew (by the Spirit of GOD upon him)

\* This appears manifestly, from many parts of the *Psalms*, particularly the seventy-second.

*there*

*there shall be no end.* To Him, with the Father, and the Holy Ghost, be all honour, and power, and praise, for evermore.

---

## C H A P. XXIV.

*DAVID's Character discussed, with regard to his Polygamy, and the Murder of Uriah.*

**I**T is, I hope, by this time, sufficiently evident to the candid and considering reader, that *David* was a very extraordinary, and even a wonderful man.

BUT still it may be objected, That however *David's* character may be otherwise advantageously distinguished, he is not however acquitted of polygamy, murder, and adultery.

I OWN it; but what will his ingenious calumniators gain by the concession? I know no man exempt from error, superior to surprize, or out of the reach of temptation to sin. *David* is himself a signal instance to the contrary. But still I cannot think him capable of a deliberate, determined, repeated violation of the will of GOD, for a series of years. There is nothing so saturnine, so black, so hellish, in his complexion. For this reason, I can by no means bring myself to believe, that he would have continued in the sin of polygamy, (as he did) knowing it to be  
a trans-



a transgression of the law of GOD. Polygamy, I humbly apprehend, was more the vice of the age, than of *David*; and therefore all the inference that I shall make from his conduct in that point, is this; That, self-evident as the law of nature may now seem, it was then too dark, even for the guidance of a prophet, left in that instance uninspired.

AND yet, if we were to define and estimate this practice by the rules of reason, the natural evils, and ill consequences, which do and ever must await it, in the ordinary train of things, sufficiently demonstrate it to be destructive of the human felicity; and consequently, vicious and unlawful: nay, one would think, that *David* himself could not fail of being fully convinced of this truth from his own experience. For what was the effect of his polygamy in his own house, and to himself; Incest, murder\*, rebellion! The incest of two sons, the rebellion and death of two sons, and the murder of one by the hand of his brother! And yet, so utterly uninforming is this evidence from the nature of things, unenlightened and unaided by revelation; that rebellion, murder, and incest united, nay, repeated rebellion, repeated incest, created no conviction in the heart of a *David*, or a *Solomon*.

As to *David's* guilt in relation to *Uriah*, I know no one that ever yet set him up for more than mortal: and is there such a thing, was

\* *Tamar, Amnon, Absalom, Adonijah.*



there ever such a thing, in this world, as an unfinning mortal? our blessed Saviour CHRIST JESUS only excepted. And is *David's* character to be meanly esteemed of, upon this account? Shew us those unfinning heroes, that are to be preferred to him. They are not, I am sure, *Cæsar*, nor *Alexander*, nor *Pompey*, nor *Antony*, nor *Sylla*, nor *Lysander*, nor even *Scipio*, however illustrious and celebrated for one instance of chastity \*.

THESE are indeed founding and glorious names, which take early possession of our highest admiration and esteem: these heroes of the Heathen world were actors in greater and more shining scenes. Pomp and prejudice delude our judgments in their favour, and we are apt to think a little king of *Judea* contemptible, upon the comparison; but we forget, that *David* did, by his piety, his prowess, and his wisdom, (aided by the spirit of God) erect himself, from a private man, into the greatest monarch of the *East*, or of his age, I had almost said, of any age: a monarchy, small indeed in extent, but great in all that constitutes the true grandeur and strength of states; men, virtue, valour, and wealth!

HERODOTUS observes of *Xerxes*, that there were in his army, πολλοὶ μὲν ἄνθρωποι, ὀλίγοι δὲ ἄνδρες, *much people, but few men*; a great croud, but few soldiers; whereas all *David's* army consisted of chosen warriors; insomuch

\* A virtue for which he was, otherwise, no way distinguished.

that the comparatively little dominion of *Judea*, and its appendages, could, upon any exigency, send more effective forces into the field, in two days, under *David*, than the whole empire of the *East* could, in so many years, under *Darius* or *Xerxes*\*.

THIS important lesson hath *David* left to princes, in his own example; as his son hath done in his precepts, (*Prov. xiv. 28.*) *In the multitude of people is the king's honour.* The true grandeur of princes consists, not in extending their dominions, but in multiplying and blessing their people; and above all, in living and acting in such a manner, as to diffuse and fix this one precept in their hearts; *Fear God, and honour the king.*

IN one word, we forget that *David* is, in his personal character, vastly superior to any one hero of all antiquity: It is indeed a mix'd character; and where is the character, at least, where is the great character, that is not? You may as well expect to find a *sun* without spots, as a great

\* When *David* ordered the people to be numbered, *Joab* made a return of thirteen hundred thousand valiant men that drew the sword in *Israel* and *Judah*: that is, there were so many men of proved experienced courage; but the whole number of trained disciplined men in that little state (no mention made of garrisons, and those two whole tribes excluded) were more than a million and an half.

This account of the matter reconciles, and is the natural interpretation of, those two passages, 2 *Sam. xxiv.* and 1 *Chron. xxi.* In the first of which it is said, That there were, in *Israel*, eight hundred thousand valiant men, that drew the sword: and in the second it is said, That all they of *Israel* were a thousand thousand men, that drew sword.

*genius.*

*genius.* The utmost that can be expected is, that the glory should be greatly predominant; and in *David* it unquestionably is so; is so to such a degree, that *Cæsar*, or *Alexander*, in point of personal accomplishments, and true sublimity of soul, are not once to be named with him. And however this may at first sight appear a paradox, I should be sorry to see even an enemy hardy or ignorant enough to give them the pre-eminence, upon due deliberation.

It is true, this great man had great blemishes: let the greatest of them be calmly and candidly considered.

DAVID's commerce with the wife of *Uriah* was, at worst, a sudden and tumultuous act of guilt: his guilt was not, even in the impeachment of the prophet, an inmate, whom he was wont to entertain; but a stranger, a traveller, that surprised him—He was ashamed of it—He would have concealed it—He endeavoured—He could not hide it—He could not bear to have it exposed—It must be hid—Nothing but murder could hide it—*Uriah* must die, or *Bathsheba* must—*Uriah* by the hands of *Ammon*, or *Bathsheba* by the hands of justice—Distressful and distracting alternative!—Honour would attend the fate of *Uriah*; infamy must attend that of *Bathsheba*. *Uriah* was a brave man, and a faithful soldier: Could *David* ever bear to behold the brave man he had abused, made privy to that abuse? Could that brave man bear to survive that abuse?—Would not murder, in this case, be a kind mercy? Whereas,



on the other hand, to desert *Bathsheba*, were the height of cruelty—To abandon the woman he had undone—to abandon to infamy, whom he had seduced (I had almost said, forced) to guilt—Could the lowest degree of honour allow this? Could any degree of humanity endure it? Such are the accursed entanglements of sin, such the workings and gradations of it in the distracted, bewildered breast that admits it: millions have been lost in these labyrinths of guilt; but none, sure, in any more intricate and perplexing than this! Are all such to be given up as abandoned? Is there no room for repentance, for amendment, for reconciliation, in such a case? GOD forbid! Is it fair, then, to consider *David* only in the light of guilt? Or should he, in common justice, be estimated, as all other men are, by the main of his life?

ONE thing I will venture to advance; That the man who reads *David's* works, considers his exploits, and weighs his character, (with all its defects) and doth not, at the same time, find himself little and contemptible upon the comparison, needs no heavier imputation of vanity, ignorance, and arrogance.

IT is but too easy to fall into temptation; and what is yet worse, from a less guilt to a greater: *All vice stands upon a precipice*, say the poets; the descent is but too easy\*; the diffi-

\* This is finely illustrated in that emblematical description, *viz.*

*Facilis descensus Averni:*

*Sed revocare gradum, superasque evadere ad auras,*

*Hic labor, hoc opus est—*



culty is to reascend: millions have fallen, have sinned, as *David* did; but who ever repented and recovered like him? Revolve his whole life before this evil accident; it is almost one train of a wise, a generous, a pious, and a valiant conduct! Revolve his whole life, from the hour of this guilt, and you will find it little else than one train of humiliation, and repentance before GOD; and this too, even after assurance of pardon from the mouth of GOD himself, by his prophet: which is in the place of ten thousand proofs of a refined piety, and exalted virtue. Or, if he varied his conduct, it was only from penance to praise; to turn all his thoughts and attention, to employ his whole heart and soul, to the glory, and in the service, of GOD; of that GOD, *who pardoned all his sins, and crowned him with mercy and loving-kindness*. And if, after all this, the Scriptures are to be reviled, for styling this man, in this character, *A man after God's own heart*, What is to be revered?

AND after all, What if this great man's fall should be found, upon a fair inquiry, matter of infinite consolation to those very men that insult it most? It is not to be presumed, that their reproaches upon *David* arise from their solicitude for the interests of virtue; and what if this instance of *David's* fall should be found the truest support of that interest? Rewards and punishments are allowed to be the great engines, by which it hath pleased GOD to govern the moral world. And therefore there is nothing in which the interest and felicity of that world is so nearly concerned,

concerned, as in the rewards of virtue, and chastisements of vice. And if so, I challenge all mankind to produce any one instance, from the foundation of the world, wherein virtue was so signally rewarded, and guilt so signally chastised\*, as in that of *David*; consequently, in which true religion, and true virtue, are so nearly and intimately interested, as in the history of his rise, and fall, and recovery; his advancement to the divine favour, and every earthly honour, by virtue; his fall from both, by sin; and his recovery, by repentance. It will not, I believe, be denied, that if the highest offence against GOD made a restoration to his favour desperate, the cause of virtue were undone, and no man would attach himself to it, upon such terms; upon assurance of being finally reprobated and rejected by GOD, upon the first fall. Could it be once imagined, that mercy made no part of the character of the Almighty, he might indeed, from that moment, be dreaded and detested, as a tyrant; but he could no more be loved and revered, as a father. And therefore *David*, with as much penetration as piety, begs to be pardoned, and restored to the favour of GOD, from this motive, that if he were so treated, he should *teach transgressors the ways of God, and sinners should be converted unto him*—Psalm li. ver. 13. Again, Psal. cxxx. *If thou, Lord, wilt be extreme to mark what is done amiss, O Lord, who shall stand? But forgiveness is with thee, that thou mayst be feared.*

\* See chap. iii. of this book.

HAPPY for mankind, that there is such an instance (an authentic instance) of falling virtue, and recovering guilt! An instance so fitted to mortify the vanity of virtue, and the merit of exalted piety; and to raise the power and price of humble penitence; to abate the pride of self-sufficiency, and support the hope of frailty! Who can confide in his own strength, when he sees a *David* fallen? And who can despair of divine mercy, when he sees him forgiven? Sad triumph of sin, over all that is great and excellent in man! Glorious triumph of repentance, over all that is shameful and dreadful in sin!

---

## C H A P. XXV.

*DAVID's Character considered in Friendship, and in Enmity.*

AS *David's* is a very distinguished character, and no one, that I know, hath ever taken the pains to place it in a true light; the reader will, I hope, not think me tedious, if I attempt to enlarge a little upon some parts of it; which have, in my humble opinion, been much less considered than they deserve.

To begin then: *David's* is, perhaps, the noblest instance of friendship yet known to the world (one only excepted): A friendship which could inspire him with the generous confidence of trusting the secret of his divine designation to the



the kingdom, to that very man, who was immediately to be affected by it ! Such a friendship implies every thing, that generosity and magnanimity can inspire. And that *Jonathan* was fully in this secret, appears clearly from 1 *Sam.* xx. A friendship, superior to the rivalry of empire, needs no higher praise, and fears no rival. It is true, *Jonathan's* unparalleled generosity gave him a noble claim to this confidence ; and, on the other hand, the unparalleled generosity of this confidence exacted a suitable return, and found it ; and was, in truth, almost sufficient to inspire it into a soul less noble and enlarged, than that of *Jonathan*. But at the same time, it must be observed, that nothing less than a full conviction of *David's* divine designation to the throne, could make his rival in empire become the guardian of his life : what was, at once, the perfection of piety and friendship upon that supposition, had been the height of folly and infatuation upon any other (and *Jonathan's* is too great a character to be debased by such vile surmises). I will not take upon me to pronounce which ought to be preferred upon the comparison : *David's* was, perhaps, the nobler friendship ; and *Jonathan's* the more amiable : not that *David's* was defective, even in what may be called the softness and infirmity of friendship ; inasmuch as we are assured, that, in the distress of parting, he *exceeded* (1 *Sam.* xx. 41.). But however that may be contested, this, I believe, will easily be allowed, that no other instance of friendship (except that of



JESUS CHRIST to his disciples) ever yet exceeded (I firmly believe, none ever equalled) either.

WHAT is singular in *David's* character is, that he knew so well how to reconcile friendship and royalty. Other princes have had confidants; but *David* had a friend: other princes have had partners in their pleasures, and sharers in the secrets of their guilt; but *David's* was a friendship of a very different complexion; a commerce, and a communication, of a very different kind. The principles upon which his friendship was founded, and the refined and delicate sense he had of that noble intercourse, are best seen in that tender complaint, at the fifty-fifth *Psalms*—*But it was thou, my companion, my guide, and mine own familiar friend. We took sweet counsel together, and walked in the house of God as friends.* The beauty and energy of the original is inexpressible: *We, who sweetened counsel, and walked in the house of God together.*

THE man that hath an heart truly turned to friendship, will feel something in those words, which no other, upon the subject, ever yet came up to; the throbbings of his own breast will be their best comment.

AND that *David* was not wanting to his son, upon this subject, may very reasonably be concluded from the many excellent precepts, and fine reflections upon friendship, scattered through his *Proverbs* \*.

\* Besides the assurance we have, that he also had a friend,  
1 *Kings* iv. 5. IN

IN that infinite number of idle objections, ignorantly urged against the Scriptures, this also hath been one; That they no-where recommend friendship, or the love of our country. To this I shall only answer at present, That if the fairest and loveliest examples of any excellence are the best recommendations of it; this, I hope, will no longer be made an objection.

BUT *David's* generosity was not confined to friendship, it was no less eminent in enmity. There is not perhaps one instance of so unjust, so ungrateful, and so inveterate a persecution as he suffered from *Saul*: this I am sure of, there is no example (but one) of such a superiority over revenge, and so noble a remission of injuries, throughout the whole compass of history! To have his mortal enemy twice absolutely in his power, and not so much as suffer him to be slain! Nay, not only his mortal enemy, but his only obstacle to empire, and yet not suffer that obstacle to be removed\*!

THERE is an united grandeur and goodness in this conduct, which innobleth the character of *David*, far beyond the ordinary idea of human excellence. And if, in this conduct, at least, *David* was not *the man after God's own heart*, who ever was? A common man would, nay, a great man might, have thought, that the providence of GOD had put his enemy in his power; and therefore the occasion was not to

\* N. B. *Jonathan*, the heir apparent to the throne, desired only to be second to *David*, 1 Sam. xxxiii. 17.

be lost. These, it is evident, were the sentiments of his followers; when *Saul* was found single, defenceless, and, in all probability, asleep in the cave (1 Sam. xxiv. 4.): *And the men of David said unto him, Behold the day, of which the Lord said unto thee, Behold, I will deliver thine enemy into thy hand: that thou mayst do to him as it shall seem good unto thee.* Yet the highest injury all this could tempt him to, was, the cutting off *Saul's* skirt of his robe: and we find, that *his heart smote him*, even for that.

NOT content with this, he soon after ran the greatest hazard of his life, to shew another instance of generosity, yet greater, if possible! He stole into *Saul's* camp, in the dead of the night, with only one companion (1 Sam. xxvi.); found *Saul* again asleep, and unarmed: his companion begg'd only for leave to smite him, and was refused; refused upon such principles as no heathen hero had an idea of: *As the Lord liveth, the Lord shall smite him; or his day shall come to die: or he shall descend into battle, and perish*, 1 Sam. xxvi. 10.

COMPARE this, ye boasters of heathen virtue, with the fabled prowess of *Ulysses* and *Diomedes*, or *Alexander's* rant \* of scorning to steal a victory; or what else, or whom else ye please; and then exult in your comparison.

\* I call this a rant, because it was not his true reason for declining to invade *Darius's* camp by night: his true reason, if I rightly remember *Arrian's* account of it, was, because in the night chance and tumult reign; whereas *Alexander's* dependance for victory was upon the fortitude and military skill of his army.

As I have nothing in view but the manifestation of truth, I will not dissemble, that *David's* character, as a generous enemy, hath been greatly impeached, by his last dying charge to his son, in relation to *Joab* and *Shimei*; on both whom he desired vengeance should be taken for those crimes, which he seemed to have forgiven in the one, by suffering them to go so long unpunished; and which he expressly forgave in the other, and confirmed that forgiveness by an oath, that he should not die.

To the first of these I answer, That *Joab's* murders were crimes, which *David* never did forgive; and very probably thought he could not, in contradiction to the express commands of GOD: and therefore that guilt, which he himself wanted power to punish \*, and which he only forbore to punish, because he wanted power; he wisely and religiously recommended to his son to expiate, by the blood of the offender, that his family, and his kingdom, might be clear of it.

\* 2 Sam. iii. 28, 29, 39.

28, *And afterward, when David heard it, he said, I and my kingdom are guiltless before the Lord for ever, from the blood of Abner the son of Ner.*

29. *Let it rest on the head of Joab, and on all his father's house; and let there not fail from the house of Joab one that bath an issue, or that is a leper, or that leaneth on a staff, or that falseth on the sword, or that lacketh bread.*

39. *And I am this day weak, though anointed king; and — the sons of Zeruiab be too hard for me. The Lord shall reward the doer of evil according to his wickedness.*

THE



THE judicious author of the *Apologue de David* (*Journal de Treveux, Tome 3.*) hath a conjecture upon this point, which is at once very ingenious, and very probable : he imagines, that *David* proposed the prize of the captain-generalship to the first that should scale the walls of *Sion*, upon a prospect, that somebody else might gain that prize, and *Joab's* authority be diminished by that means : but his felicity defeated the design.

HE, after this, took measures to depose him, in favour of *Amasa* ; but was defeated also in that design.

JOAB was his near kinsman ; he was valiant, and in other respects faithful to him ; and *David* had no personal pique to him before the death of *Absalom* (and he would have put him to death before that, had he been able) : What then but duty could sway him, in this conduct, against so many prejudices ?

AS to the next objection, it is evident, that if *David* had been acted, in this affair, by a spirit of revenge, he would not have spared *Shimei*, in the very instant of passion and provocation ; and when he was so earnestly importuned for leave to punish him. *Plutarch* reports of *Pericles*, that when one of the *Athenians* had railed at him all day, and pursued him to his house, reviling him, *Pericles* only turned about at the door, and calling to one of his servants, ordered him to lead that citizen home to his house. This is allowed an extraordinary

ordinary instance of temper in *Pericles*; but it must be observed, that his reviler was a fellow-citizen, *David's* a subject, and a rebel: *Pericles's* conduct but asserted his superiority over an idle insignificant man; *David's* proclaimed his humiliation to GOD.

ST. AMBROSE tells us of *Theodosius*, (*de obit. Theodosi.*) That he looked upon it as a favour done him, when he was desired to forgive. *Theodosius* forgave, when he was petitioned to pardon; *David*, when he was importuned to punish; herein imitating the mercy of GOD, who, as *Isaiah* expresses it, *waiteth that he may be gracious*. Had *David* copied after any lower pattern, he had not spared *Shimei*, in the very instant of passion and provocation: nor would he afterwards have forgiven him, in the fulness of prosperity and power. That fulness of power, which is wont to swell other breasts with rancour, at the remembrance of injuries and insolence in avenging them, did but soften and sweeten his. *David's* patience under *Shimei's* reproaches is, at once, a strong instance of heroic magnanimity, and signal resignation to the will of GOD. He had before conquered great nations, by his fortitude and conduct, as a captain; and heroes and leaders by his personal prowess: but he was now yet greater, upon *Solomon's* principles, in ruling his own spirit, and subduing his resentments to the humiliation which he owed to GOD. He very well knew how  
much

much the remission of personal injuries became the kingly character; and therefore he gave *Shimei* his life, and confirmed the grant by an oath. But then it must be remembered that the obligation of this oath was purely personal; for so he himself explains it, 1 *Kings* ii. 8. *And I swear unto him by the Lord, saying, I will not put thee to death with the sword.* And therefore, although *David* was bound, *Solomon* was at full liberty to vindicate the majesty of kings, in chastising this high insult upon his father after such a manner as he thought fit; nor was there any danger of doing this to excess, when the chastisement was deferred to the calm and cool season of dispassionate justice; when neither passion, nor personal resentment, could inflame the vengeance. *David* well knew how much it became the piety of his character, to remit himself, and his concerns, to the divine disposal, throughout the whole course of his life; but could he, for this reason, wholly renounce the interest of justice? Or if he could, he very well knew how dangerous an example it might be to his successors, to suffer such injuries and insults upon majesty to pass unpunished: and therefore, when he had acted up to the piety and dignity of his own character, he very wisely admonished his son, to act up to the wisdom of his.

AND here I must beg leave to observe, that this reasoning sufficiently justifies *David* in this point, even upon supposition that the the text is  
rightly

rightly translated, which I am, in my private judgment, fully convinced it is not : for surely the particle *Vau* ( ו ) ought to be rendered here, as in all similar cases, not connectively, but disjunctively. I shall instance only in one case ; I might mention many.

AGUR \* beseeches GOD to keep him from the extremes both of poverty and wealth. If the particle *Vau* were to be interpreted here connectively, the petition would run thus—*Give me not poverty and riches*—Every one sees the absurdity of this petition ; and therefore the translators rightly rendered it, *Give me neither poverty nor riches*. In the same analogy the passage in question, rightly translated, will stand thus : *Now therefore neither bold him guiltless, (for thou art a wise man, and knowest what thou oughtest to do unto him) nor his hoar head bring thou down to the grave with blood*. This advice, in this sense, is full of humanity, as well as wisdom ; and *Solomon* (we see) understood and observed it in this sense, and in no other.

\* *Prov.* xxx. 8.



C H A P. XXVI.

*A short Comparison of DAVID, with Alexander, Cæsar, and Scipio. His Character concludes this Work.*

DAVID compared with Alexander.

MY purpose, in this short essay, is not to debase the sacred character of *David* by a minute comparison with men, who (with all their vaunts of valour, and military exploits) had little truly heroic or excellent in their composition; and that little, confined to the single character of *Scipio*. The other two were, at best, but successful and accomplished robbers and murderers: riot, and vanity, ambition, irreligion, and sensuality, distinguish and sum up the rest of their character. The only honour, then, that I mean to *David* in this comparison, is barely to shew, how far he excelled them, where they excelled themselves.

TO begin then, *Alexander* is celebrated for a noble instance of abstinence recorded of him by *Curtius*\*; and perhaps the noblest act of his whole life.

THE king, distressed with thirst, meets a soldier carrying some water to the relief of his sons, in like distress. The generous soldier offers his

\* See *Curtius*, lib. vii. cap. 5.

prince a part of his treasure; he received it, and upon learning for whom it was intended, returned it untouched: *It is too little for all* (says he) *and I cannot bear to be relieved alone.*

THE king had just before been in some despondency, on account of the distress his army suffered in a desolate country for want of water; and his friends besought him to remember, that his fortitude was the only stay of his fainting forces: and now a noble occasion offered of animating them to patience by his own example, and he employed it with becoming magnanimity.

THE reader will recollect a like instance of David's abstinence, from the twenty-third chapter of the second book of *Samuel*: *And three of the thirty chiefs went down, and came to David in the harvest-time unto the cave of Adullam. And the troop of the Philistines pitched in the valley of Rephaim: and David was then in an hold, and the garrison of the Philistines then in Bethlehem; and David longed, and said, Oh! that one would give me to drink of the water of the well of Bethlehem, which is by the gate! And the three mighty men brake through the host of the Philistines, and drew water out of the well at Bethlehem, and took and brought it to David: nevertheless he would not drink thereof, but poured it out unto the Lord. And he said, Be it far from me, O Lord, that I should do this! Is not this the blood of the men, that went in jeopardy of their lives? Therefore he would not drink it.*

ALEXANDER abstained in a country where he was master, and under the security of being relieved in a few hours. He abstained for the support of an army, which in all probability had desponded upon his indulging : nor could he have indulged, without some degree of inhumanity to a faithful soldier, an afflicted father, and his fainting children. *David* abstained when he was in hold, and hemmed in by a mighty army, in the scorching heat of autumn ; and when his relief would, in all probability, have given new life to his companions ! A much higher and nobler instance of abstinence, founded upon nobler principles, upon the motives of a most generous humanity, and most exalted piety ! What was purchased at the hazard of such lives, was too precious to be sacrificed at private gratification ; and therefore was poured out in a thank-offering to God, for their deliverance.

IF we consider *David* in the light of his personal courage, will any hero of antiquity exceed him ? Will any equal him ?

ALEXANDER hath indeed the fairest claim of competition with him ; and yet, I think, *Alexander's* own flattering historian would be forced to give *David* the preference upon the comparison. If *Alexander* slew a lion, he slew him, by *Curtius's* own account, armed \*, and at advantage ; and we know, that *Lyfimachus* claimed the honour, of being his assistant in the combat : not to insist, that *Alexander's* combat

\* *Curtius, lib. viii. cap. 1.*



was wanton, and out of character, and well deserved the taunt which the *Spartan* ambassador threw upon him, on that occasion. *David* subdued his lion (to say nothing of the bear) single, and unarmed, and in the duty of his character; and, when he had done so, he took no pride from the merit of his prowess; but gave GOD the glory of his deliverance.

HAD *Alexander* engaged and conquered *Porus*, (which, by the way, he manifestly declined, till he found him in flight and wounded) as *David* did *Goliath*; how had the world been stunned with the vaunts of his own vanity, and the echoes of his flatterers! *David* is the same silent unassuming man after his conquest, that he was before, and rather declines than claims the reward of his prowess\*; judging of his real merit, and the esteem conceived of it by others, by that humble opinion which he himself entertained of it. And, to shew how intirely he ascribed the success of his combat to the good providence and protection of the Almighty, he hung up the sword of *Goliath*, the trophy of his conquest, in the tabernacle of his GOD.

IN one word, *David* is perhaps the single instance of great talents untainted by pride! or, to speak more properly, of great talents, signally adorned and illustrated by a most conspicuous and exemplary humility!

I HAVE already mentioned some instances of *David's* magnanimity; give me leave to add

\* 1 Sam. xviii. 18, &c.



another, not so interesting and illustrious at first sight; and yet such as perhaps will be found, upon inquiry, no way inferior to the greatest instances of heroism, recorded by antiquity.

DAVID, prosecuted by *Saul*, throws himself under the protection of his mortal enemy, the protection of *Achish* king of *Gath*; that king, whose hero he had slain, and whose armies he had routed. This was a resolution above the conception of a common heart! A resolution which none but a consummate hero was capable of forming! The generosity of his own heart suggested to him, what reception *Achish* was bound to give him, in the character of a king. He well knew, that the protection of a brave enemy in distress was the noblest ensign of royalty; the character and test of true glory! *Achish*, it is true, had it not (kings are not always what they should be): *David* found his error, and changed his conduct; and immediately put on that character, to which it was natural his present condition should reduce him: he appeareth mad; and it was natural to believe, that the distresses he endured, might have turned his brain. *David's* character was well known at *Gath*; and perhaps it was an observation older than *Solomon*, that *Oppression maketh a wise man mad*. The event was answerable: *Achish* was deluded, and *David* delivered.

A THINKING reader will, I am persuaded, find, in this conduct of *David*, all the magnanimity of *Coriolanus*, (freed from the leaven which debased it) and all the dexterity of *Brutus*.

## DAVID compared with Cæsar.

THE sacred historian observes of *David*, that he was thirty years old when he began to reign, and he reigned forty years; seven years and six months in *Hebron*, and thirty-three in *Jerusalem*.

It is obvious to observe from hence, that *David* was not raised to the throne till the levity of youth was over; and, with that, the pride and self-sufficiency which is so apt to overset it. He was early anointed to the regal office, to inspire him with noble purposes, and a conduct suitable to the dignity for which he was designed; but he was long exercised in toils and calamities of various kinds, before he was put in possession of it; that he might discharge it under the united advantages of more experience, and more moderation. And the best historians have observed, that this hath frequently been the condition and character of the best princes. An observation sufficiently justified by the princes of our own, as well as those of other nations.

My lord *Bacon* observes of *Cæsar*, that he first encountered a rugged fortune, which turned to his advantage: *For this* (saith that noble writer) *curbed his pride, and spurred his industry.*

As *David* had more native and acquired humility than any mere mortal, the prevention of pride in him, who was to be a perpetual reformer of the world, and inspirer of virtue, was of vastly more consequence, than the repressing

of it in *Cæsar*, who was only a temporary conqueror.

CÆSAR, bred up in luxury and ease, was naturally slothful, (as lions, tigers, and other beasts of prey, are, from a noble appointment of Providence, found to be) though, occasionally, active beyond most others. *David's* condition of life inured him to early vigilance: insomuch that activity quickly became in him a natural habit. And the sequel of his life sufficiently shews, of how much consequence it was to have that habit early inspired and impressed upon him; and long cultivated and continued. *Cæsar's* natural indolence needed all the incitements of ambition, to rouse him to the ruin of his country: *David's* activity called only for those of duty to inspire him, to redeem his.

CÆSAR is celebrated by all historians, for his clemency; because, when possessed of the supreme power, he employed it not in the gratification of his revenge; but received most of those to mercy, that sued to him for it: that is, *Cæsar* is celebrated, upon this account, that when he had destroyed the constitution of his country, and usurped upon the liberties of his fellow-citizens, he did not, with their liberties, strip all that opposed him of their lives also; though many he did. *David*, when he had quelled the most unnatural and most unjust rebellion that ever was raised against a rightful, a lawful, a just, a wise, and a good king; received the whole number of his rebellious subjects into mercy at once, without making one single sacrifice,



fice, either to vengeance, or the terror of rebellion. Here then is the difference: *Cæsar* is celebrated for not copying the cruelty of *Marius* and *Sylla*; *David* is illustrious for imitating the mercy of GOD.

*DAVID compared with Scipio.*

THE early scenes of *Scipio* the elder's life cannot fail to render him an object of the highest admiration and esteem to all that honour true fortitude, and true patriotism: that particularly (after the field of *Cannæ*) in which, with a most glorious resolution, and heroic ardour of soul, he arrested the desperate counsels of some of the young *Roman* nobility, who were deliberating about deserting their country; and, with his drawn sword at their breasts, forced them into a solemn oath to abide by it, and support it.

LET me but briefly observe, that the persons thus influenced by *Scipio* were young, noble, and sufficiently interested in the well-being of their country. And now let the candid reader indulge me in recollecting a short transaction, already noticed in the life of *David*, wholly referring it to his own judgment and ingenuity, to infer and apply, as he thinks proper.

DAVID, driven into exile by the joint ingratitude and injustice of his country and his prince, became the common refuge of the distressed, the indebted, the discontented: And how did he employ all these? Was it in the common way of gratifying their vices, and his  
own



own revenge? Quite otherwise: his first care was, to place his parents, and his brethren, safe, under the protection of the king of *Moab*; and that was scarce over, when the distressed of his country called for his aid. *Keilah* was besieged by the *Philistines*, the country was ravaged, and the threshing-floors robbed: and *Saul*, intent upon vengeance\*, neglected every thing but the pursuit of *David*; whilst *David*, careless of his own safety, employed his power no otherwise than in influencing all those sour and exasperated spirits, who had now no property, and, of consequence, no interest, in the well-being of their country, into one common care and concern for its safety; to the double danger of their own lives from the *Philistines* before them, and *Saul* behind. And therefore, when *David* urged them to this glorious enterprize, their answer was very natural: *Behold, we be afraid here in Judah: how much more then, if we come to Keilah, against the armies of the Philistines?* They were in sufficient danger from one enemy, where they were; and could it be less than desperate rashness, to thrust themselves between two? And yet, notwithstanding this remonstrance, *David's* influence prevailed. And certainly nothing but the highest veneration of the superior prowess, wisdom, and magnanimity, of

\* This eagerness of *Saul* for vengeance upon *David* is beautifully expressed in that attitude, in which he and his army are painted in the text, 1 Sam. xxii. 6. Now *Saul* abode in *Gibeah*, under a tree in *Ramah*, having his spear in his hand, and all his servants standing about him.

their leader, could sway them to so noble a resolution, against such just fears: nor was their confidence misplaced; they fought, they defeated the *Philistines* with a great slaughter; they spoiled their enemies, and they saved their country.

HAD *David* been an heathen hero, with what endless praises had this unparalleled instance of patriotism been pealed in our ears!

FEW men have ever won more glory, by any act of heroism, than *Scipio* by one instance of temperance, in abstaining (in the prime of youth) from a fair captive of great quality, whom the chance of war had put into his power; and restoring her, untouched and unransomed, to a prince, to whom she was affianced. It hath hitherto made no part of *David's* praise, that he treated *Abigail* with an abstinence of at least equal virtue. *Scipio's* policy was concerned in his abstinence; he gained an alliance of great consequence by it: *David* consulted no interest in his abstinence, but that of virtue.

SCIPIO abstained, where gratitude must make him a friend: *David*, where ingratitude had made him an enemy. *Scipio* spared the spouse of a young prince, that loved her to distraction: in *David's* case, it might be insisted, that a brute, and a fool, was incapable of love. The same compassion and humanity that pleaded for restoring his spouse to *Allucio*, might be pleaded for not restoring *Abigail* to *Nabal*.

IN the last place, *Allucio's* spouse might be fair, yet not desirable in the eyes of *Scipio*: the

event sufficiently shews, that *Abigail* was very amiable in the eyes of *David*.

IN one word, policy, humanity, compassion, and, it may be, indifference, pleaded for the abstinence of *Scipio*; duty only for that of *David*.

BUT, after all, it must be owned, that there is one objection to *David's* character, both in point of humility and patriotism; I mean, the calamity derived upon his country, by his vain numbering of the people.

ADMIT this the effect of a criminal vanity, (tho' it might as well have been the effect of true piety and gratitude to GOD\*) yet must it be allowed, that no vanity could be more natural to the human heart; no delusion could be more tempting to a man raised from obscurity, than a desire of knowing the extent of that royal power, to which he was exalted. And shall one transgression of this kind impeach a character established by the tenor of life? GOD forbid! But, however this may be deemed, by superficial and libertine spirits, to affect him in point of humility, the praise of his patriotism is undoubtedly raised by it; inasmuch as he evidently intended no evil to his people, in that account he ordered to be taken of them. And, when he found it came upon them, he, with a

\* This criminal conduct of *David* will, however, in my humble opinion, receive some alleviation from that declaration of his being moved to it, though GOD's anger kindled against that people, 2 *Sam.* xxiv. 1. and as their antecedent sins had drawn this judgment upon them, their subsequent neglect of the atonement, in that case required, was, in all probability, a great aggravation of it. See *Exod.* xxx. 12. and subsequent verses.



generosity far transcending that either of a *Decius*, or a *Codrus*, offered not only himself, but his whole family also, to be devoted to destruction in their stead (2 Sam. xxiv. 17.): *And David spake unto the Lord, when he saw the angel that smote the people; and said, Lo, I have sinned, and I have done wickedly; but these sheep, what have they done? Let thine hand, I pray thee, be against me, and against my father's house.*

UPON the whole, *David's* is a character which stands single, in the accounts of the world; equally eminent, and unrivalled.

FOR, not to insist upon his great personal accomplishments, such as beauty, stature, strength, swiftness, and eloquence; his character is sufficiently distinguished by the noblest qualities, endowments, and events.

EXALTED from an humble shepherd to a mighty monarch, without the least tincture of pride, disdain, or envy! Quite otherwise; remarkably humble in exaltation; or rather, humbled by it! Exalted unenvied! Exalted himself, and equally exalting the state he ruled; raising it from contempt, poverty, and oppression, to wealth, dignity, and sway! A man experienced in every vicissitude of fortune and life, and equal to them all! Thoroughly tried in adversity, and tempted by success! yet still superior! Cruelly and unjustly persecuted! yet not to be provoked even to just revenge! In the saddest and suddenest reverse of fortune, depressed by nothing but the remembrance of guilt; and, in conse-



346 *An Historical Account, &c.* B. 4.  
quence of that, unhumbled to any thing but  
GOD!

To sum up all; A true believer, and zealous  
adorer, of GOD; teacher of his law and wor-  
ship, and inspirer of his praise! A glorious ex-  
ample, a perpetual and inexhaustible fountain,  
of true piety! A consummate and unequalled  
hero, a skilful and a fortunate captain! A steady  
patriot, a wise ruler, a faithful, a generous, and a  
magnanimous friend! And, what is yet rarer, a  
no less generous and magnanimous enemy! A  
true penitent, a divine musician, a sublime poet,  
and an inspired prophet! By birth a peasant,  
by merit a prince! In youth, a hero; in man-  
hood, a monarch; in age, a saint!

THIS is DAVID. What his revilers are,  
their own revilings tell.

*The END.*

BOOKS lately published by the Author of the LIFE  
of DAVID. And sold by JOHN RIVINGTON, at the  
Bible and Crown, in St. Paul's Church-Yard.

I. **R**EVELATION examined with Candour ; Or, A Fair Inquiry into the Sense and Use of the several Revelations expressly declared, or sufficiently implied, to be given to Mankind from the Creation, as they are found in the Bible. In Two Volumes. Price 9 s.

II. Twenty Sermons upon Social Duties, and their opposite Vices. To which is added, An Essay towards evidencing the Divine Original of Tythes, which the Author considers as a Species of Social Duties. And Sixteen Discourses upon Doctrines and Duties more peculiarly Christian ; and against the reigning Vanities of the Age. In Two Volumes Octavo. Price bound 10 s.

N B. The Sixteen Discourses on Christian Duties may be had alone. Price bound 5 s.

III. The Doctrine of Abstinence from Blood defended. In Answer to Two Pamphlets ; the One called, *The Question about eating Blood stated and examined, &c.* The other intitled, *The Prohibition of Blood a Temporary Precept.* Price 2 s. 6 d. sewed.

IV. Reflections upon Polygamy, and the Encouragement given to that Practice in the Scripture of the Old Testament. By *Philadelphus Dublinensis.* With a Preface, in which the main Objection against the Work is obviated, and the Author's Views in publishing it at this Time accounted for. Price 2 s. 6 d. stitch'd in blue Paper.

Books sold by John Rivington.

1. *Pamela ; or, Virtue Rewarded.* In a Series of familiar Letters, from a beautiful young Damsel to her Parents. And afterwards in her exalted Condition, between her and Persons of Figure and Quality, upon the most important and entertaining Subjects in genteel Life. In Four Volumes, 8vo. Published in order to cultivate the Principles of Virtue and Religion in the Minds of the Youth of both Sexes. Adorned with Twenty-nine Copperplates, designed and engraved by Mr. Hayman and Mr. Gravelot. Price bound 1 l. 4 s.

2. *Pamela ; or, Virtue Rewarded.* In Four Volumes, 12mo. Price bound 12 s.

3. *Pamela ; ou, La Vertu Recompenfée.* Traduit de l' Angloise. En Deux Tomes. Price 6 s.

4. *Clarissa ; or, The History of a young Lady : Comprehending the most Important Concerns of Private Life.* In Eight Volumes, 12mo. Price bound 1 l. 4 s.

5. The same in Seven Volumes, 8vo. Price bound, 1 l. 15 s.

6. The

6. The History of Sir Charles Grandison. In Seven Volumes, 12mo Price bound 1 l. 1 s.

7. The same in Six Volumes, 8vo. Price bound 1 l. 10 s.

8. A Collection of the Moral and Instructive Sentiments, Maxims, Cautions, and Reflexions, contained in the Histories of *Pamela*, *Clarissa*, and Sir Charles Grandison. Digested under Proper Heads. In One Volume, 12mo. Price bound 3 s.

9. *Æ S O P*'s Fables. With instructive Morals and Reflections, abstracted from all Party Considerations, adapted to all Capacities; and designed to promote Religion, Morality, and Universal Benevolence. Containing 240 Fables, with a Cut engraved on Copper to each Fable. And the Life of *Azop* prefixed. Price 2 s. 6 d.

10. LETTERS To and For particular Friends, on the most important Occasions, directing not only the requisite Style and Forms to be observed in writing familiar Letters, but how to think and act justly and prudently in the common Concerns of Human Life. Containing 173 Letters. The Sixth Edition. Price 2 s. 6 d.

---

BOOKS Published and Sold by GEORGE KEITH, at  
the Bible and Crown, Gracechurch-Street.

1. *BURNHAM*'s pious Memorials recommended by the Rev. Mr. *Hervey*. Price 5 s

2. Book of *Homilies* on the Doctrines of the Church, 12 s.

3. *Cole*'s Discourse on the Sovereignty of God, 2 s. 6 d.

4. *Clare*'s Youth's Introduction to Trade and Business, 2 s. 6 d.

5. Dr. *Chauncy*'s Doctrine according to Godliness, grounded upon the Holy Scriptures of Truth, and agreeable to the English Protestant Articles and Confessions, 2 s. 6 d.

6. *Burkit* on the New Testament, 1 l. 4 s.

7. Dr. *Edwards*'s, Body of Divinity, 3 vol. fol. 2 l. 2 s.

8. *Flavel*'s England's Duty under the present Gospel Liberty, 3 s.

9. Dr. *Gill*'s Exposition of the Prophets, 2 vol. fol. 2 l. 10 s.

10. ——— Exposition of the Song of *Solomon*, 10 s 6 d.

11. ——— on the five Points, 4 vol. 16 s.

12. Dr. *Leland*'s Defence of the Authority of the Old and New Testament, 5 s.

13. *Mason*'s Hymns and Spiritual Songs, 1 s. 6 d.

14. Dr. *Owen*'s Meditations on the Glory of *Christ*, 3 s.

15. Dr. *Cheyne*'s Philosophical Principles of Religion, 5 s.

16. *Drelincourt*'s Defence against the Fears of Death, 4 s.

17. The Gentleman's Library, 3 s. 6 d.

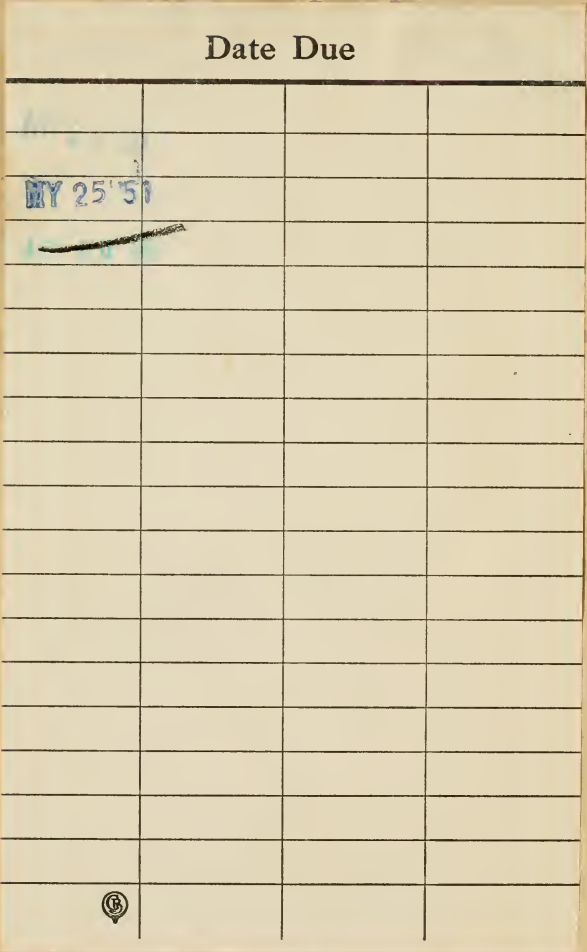
18. *Henry*'s Directions for Daily Communion with God, 1 s.

19. Dr. *Lucas*'s Enquiry after Happiness, 2 vol. 10 s.

20. *Woolaston*'s Religion of Nature, 6 s.





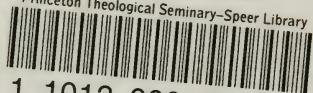
[illegible][illegible]



BS1197 .4.D33 v.2

An historical account of the life and

Princeton Theological Seminary-Speer Library



1 1012 00012 0867